

Mythology Photography Fiction Fish  
Christianity Art Cooking Essays  
Buddhism Freemasonry Medicine Biology  
Music Ancient Egypt Evolution  
Carpentry Physics Dance Geology  
Vermorel Mathematics Fitness Shakespeare  
Science Yoga Marketing Confidence  
Immortality Biographies Poetry  
Psychology Witchcraft Electronics  
Chemistry History Law Accounting  
Philosophy Anthropology Alchemy Drama  
Quantum Mechanics Atheism Sexuality  
Personal Health Ancient History Criminal  
Entomology Ships Languages Sport  
Paleontology Newsletters Fantasy  
Metaphysics Investment Archaeology

# Forgotten Books

— [www.forgottenbooks.com](http://www.forgottenbooks.com) —

Copyright © 2016 FB &c Ltd.

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, distributed, or transmitted in any form or by any means, including photocopying, recording, or other electronic or mechanical methods, without the prior written permission of the publisher, except in the case of brief quotations embodied in critical reviews and certain other noncommercial uses permitted by copyright law.

THE  
NOBLE EIGHTFOLD PATH

BEING

The James Long Lectures on Buddhism  
for 1900—1902 A.D.

BY THE

REV. W. ST. CLAIR-TISDALL, M.A., C.M.S.

AUTHOR OF

‘THE RELIGION OF THE CRESCENT,’ ETC.

‘*Ayaṃ eva Ariyo Atthaṅgiko Maggo*’

*Dhammacakkappavattana-Suttaṃ*, § 3.

*Πᾶς γὰρ ὁ βίος τοῦ ἀνθρώπου εὐρυθμίας τε καὶ εὐαρμοστίας δεῖται.*

PLATO : *Protagoras*, 326, B.

LONDON

ELLIOT STOCK, 62, PATERNOSTER ROW, E.C.

1903



TO  
SIR WILLIAM MUIR, K.C.S.I., D.C.L., ETC.,  
VICE-CHANCELLOR AND PRINCIPAL OF THE UNIVERSITY  
OF EDINBURGH,  
IN TOKEN OF RESPECT AND ADMIRATION,  
THIS LITTLE WORK  
IS, WITH HIS PERMISSION,  
DEDICATED





## PREFACE

THE four lectures contained in this volume are those which, in a somewhat shorter form, have been delivered at the Universities of Cambridge (Westminster College) and Durham, at Manchester Cathedral, and at many other places, during the last two years, under the auspices of the Trustees of the James Long Lectureship Fund in connexion with the C.M.S. I gladly embrace this opportunity of acknowledging the kindness with which my attempt to show what the main features of Buddhism in its original form were has been everywhere received.

It will be observed that I have throughout dealt with Buddhism *at its best*—that is, with the doctrines taught by Buddha himself, and not with the corrupt forms of Buddhism now found in Tibet, Mongolia, China, Japan, and other lands. To deal with these latter at all satisfactorily would have enlarged the book to many times its present size, and would have tended to distract the reader's attention from the original and purest form of the philosophy which I have tried to explain. It would be difficult to find anything to say in favour of these corrupt forms of Buddhism, and to deal with them thoroughly would require far more learning than I possess.

## PREFACE

Having for many years been an earnest student of religions and philosophies, and at the same time of Oriental languages, it has been my principle never to accept any statement second-hand, as it were, regarding any religion or philosophy, but to test everything for myself, and to go to the root of the matter, as far as possible, by consulting authoritative documents in the original languages. This plan I have pursued in the present work, just as I did in a previous course of James Long Lectures on Muḥammadanism, published in 1895 under the title of 'The Religion of the Crescent.' In order, however, to enable the student to test the correctness of the views I have enunciated, on all important points I have quoted in the notes the original documents upon which my statements are based. I have also, of course, consulted the leading English, German, and French works on Buddhism, as far as I could, and gladly acknowledge my indebtedness to not a few of them. But I trust that, being naturally 'Nullius addictus iurare in verba magistri,' I have not adopted a single opinion without having carefully tested its correctness to the best of my ability.

Should this little work in any degree enable the thoughtful reader to attain a correct and impartial view of the true nature of Buddhism in its original form, and should it prove useful to Christians living among Buddhists in producing in their minds more true sympathy with the latter, and thus aid them to understand how best to present the great truths of the Gospel to those whose own gloomy philosophy so clearly proves their deep need of *Christ*, I shall be more than repaid for the many months of steady work which I have devoted to the preparation of these pages.

In my quotations from the original Buddhist Scriptures

I have in almost every case quoted from the valuable edition of these works issued by the Pāli Text Society. It is unnecessary for me to testify to the care with which the series has been prepared for publication, but it would afford me much pleasure to know that this little book had been of use in calling attention to the value of this edition. Buddhist philosophy deserves more serious study than it has yet received—at least, from the majority of the professed admirers of Buddhism in England and America. The only way to obtain a real knowledge of it is to study its *origines* in the books of the Pāli Canon. What would be thought of one who professed a great admiration for Plato or Aristotle, but was unable to read a line of these authors in the original? If those who praise Buddhism so much, as many do nowadays, are really in earnest, let them study the philosophy seriously, as this edition enables them to do. They will thus be better fitted to form a correct judgment regarding Buddha's place in philosophy, and be far less liable to deceive themselves and others regarding it. Professor Rhys Davids' Hibbert Lectures and other works on Buddhism, together with Dr. Hoey's admirable English version of Oldenberg's 'Buddha,' will also prove of great value to the student, as will many other works mentioned in the appended Bibliography.

It remains for me to express my recognition of the deep debt of gratitude which I owe to Dr. Hoey for very carefully reading over these lectures in manuscript, and for the many valuable suggestions and the kind encouragement he has afforded me. Dr. Hoey when in India devoted much care to the task of identifying the various places<sup>1</sup> mentioned in early Buddhist works in

<sup>1</sup> It is unfortunate that no two neighbouring places visited by either of the Chinese Buddhist pilgrims have been identified with absolute

connexion with the life and labours of Buddha, and I am greatly indebted to him for the information on this subject which he has so kindly given me, and also for the map which he has himself provided for this book. I have made great use of his two articles 'On the Identification of Kusinārā, Vaiṣālī, and other Places mentioned by the Chinese Pilgrims,' published in the *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal* (vol. lxxix., part i., No. 1, 1900, and vol. lxxx., part i., No. 1, 1901). It is to Dr. Hoey's assistance in this matter that I am indebted for the opportunity of laying before the reader the very latest geographical discoveries in connexion with the 'Holy Land of the Buddhists.' I have also to thank Professor Rhys Davids for very kindly perusing the manuscript of this work and advising its publication.

W. ST. C.-T.

BEDFORD,

*December, 1902.*

---

certainty, nor has the course taken by them between any two points been ascertained beyond all doubt. Hence it has not been possible to calculate with accuracy the value of either a *yojana* or a *li*. But the value of the identifications proposed by Dr. Hoey in the two papers contributed on this subject to the *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal* seems to me to be very considerable. The map will enable the reader to follow any further discoveries that may be made. The probable site of Śravastī has been discovered, and will soon be made public.

## NOTE ON THE PRONUNCIATION OF THE ENGLISH LETTERS EMPLOYED IN THESE PAGES TO TRANSLITERATE PĀLĪ AND SANSKRIT WORDS

ALL the vowels, except *a*, have the same pronunciation as in Italian, *o* and *e* being properly, however, always *long*. When *a* is not marked long, it is pronounced like *u* in *but*. The dotted letters *ṭ*, *ḍ*, *ḷ*, *ṇ*, are cerebrals, pronounced by applying the point of the tongue to the palate. *T* and *d* are pronounced as in Italian, more softly than in English. *Sh* is a cerebral, while *ṣ* is the ordinary English *sh*. *C* is pronounced as *ch* in *church*, which word would in Pāli be written *cavc*. *Kh*, *gh*, *ṭh*, *ḍh*, *th*, *dh*, *jh*, *bh*, have each letter pronounced separately, as in *inkhorn*, *hit him*, etc. *Ṃ* has a nasal sound; *ṇ* is pronounced as in Spanish, *ny*; *j* and the remaining letters as in English, except that *g* is always hard.





# CONTENTS

	PAGES
PREFACE	ix
INTRODUCTION	xix

## LECTURE I

### LIFE AND WORK OF THE BUDDHA

Character of Period at which Buddhism arose—Intended to be a Universal Religion, the First such Scheme—India had lost Knowledge of God—Aim of Buddha's *Philosophy*—His Birth and Early Life—Becomes an Ascetic—Reason for this Conduct—Dissatisfied—Became 'Enlightened'—His Claims—No Room for God in his *Philosophy*—Its Essence—First Preaching at Banāras—The Middle Path—The Four Noble Truths—No Search for God—Buddha's Command to preach the Law—Converts numerous—The Threefold Refuge—Creed of Buddhism—Buddha's Son Rāhulo—Unworthy Adherents—Buddha's Daily Life—Nuns—Buddha's Teaching not for the Simple—Attitude towards Brāhmaṇs and Caste—Method of Teaching—False Disciples—Parting Addresses to his Order—The Final Scene

I—66

## LECTURE II

### THE CHIEF DOCTRINES OF BUDDHISM

Foundation on which Buddhist Doctrines rest—Canonical *Pālī* Books—No Inspiration claimed—The Four Truths explained—Pessimism—Noble Eightfold Path—Nirvāṇa—Karma—Evil the Fruit of Evil, Good of Good—Universality of Suffering—Cause and Extinction of Suffering—Chain of Causation



	PAGE
—The Ego—Previous Buddhas—The Future Buddha—Transmigration—The God of Death—The Deities also suffer and die—No Escape but in obtaining <i>Nirvāṇa</i> —Buddhist Calm—Is <i>Nirvāṇa</i> Extinction?—Comparison with Hindu Philosophy—‘Menander’s Inquiry’—Why did Buddha suffer?—Not all Suffering from Sin—Comfort to the Sorrowing—Story of <i>Kisā-Gotamī</i> —Influence of his Environment on Buddha’s Teaching—The <i>Devas</i> and other Superhuman Beings—The Heavens— <i>Sakko</i> , <i>Māro</i> , <i>Brahmā</i> —The Hells—Buddhist Cosmogony and Geography—Eclipses—Origin of Later Forms of Buddhism—True and False Liberalism in Religion	67—115

### LECTURE III

#### BUDDHA’S MORAL TEACHING

Buddha regards Everything from a Selfish Standpoint—Moral Ideas conditioned by Desire to obtain *Nirvāṇa*—Good and Evil have no Real Existence—Three Varieties of Ethical System—Duty of Lay Adherents—‘Buddhist Beatitudes’—Verses from the *Dhammapadam*—Confusion between Innocent and Wicked Deeds—Influence of Doctrine of Metempsychosis on Ethics—Evil Conduct condemned—‘An Outcast’ defined—Ten ‘Moral Precepts’—The ‘Four Prohibitions’—The *Pātimokkham*—*Uposatho*, or Buddhist Sabbath—Defects of Buddhist Moral System—The *Āsavos*—Benevolence—The ‘Ten Fetters’—Meaning of ‘Ignorance’ (*Avijjā*)—‘Disgust’—The Four Stages on the Road to *Nirvāṇa*—Transmigration—Duties of an Inquirer—Of the Buddhist Monk—‘Purity’—The ‘Four Destructions’—The ‘Six Crimes’—Buddhist Morality Negative—Oldenberg on Buddhist ‘Benevolence’—Less expected of the *Arahat* than of the Lay Adherent—The ‘Ten Perfections’—Buddha’s Previous Births—As a Monkey—As *Sāmo*—As an Elephant—As Prince Vessantaro—The Latter Tale a Complete Exposition of Buddhist Ethics 116—159

### LECTURE IV

#### BUDDHISM AND CHRISTIANITY

- I. Comparison with Christianity—Lack of Noble Motive in Buddhist Morality—Its Self-contradiction—Buddhist Selfishness

and Christian Love to God—No Aim of Existence in Buddhism—Christianity reveals Divine Purpose—Buddhist Half-truths—Earth's Pleasures unsatisfying—'Other-Worldliness' also Vain—Buddhist Equanimity and Christ's 'Peace'—Importance of Conduct here—'Whatsoever a Man soweth'—Buddha failed to find Remedy for Evil—Christ's Atonement—Evil overruled for Good—Need to burst World Fetters—Various Buddhist Precepts compared with Christian Ones—Perverted Ideas of Self-Sacrifice—Buddhist Celibacy—Its Cause and Bad Effects. 2. Contrast between Buddhism and Christianity—B. a Doctrine of Despair, C. of Hope and Joy—Buddhist <i>Arahat</i> and Christian Saint—Buddhist Monk's Idleness—Christianity teaches Dignity of Labour—Māro's Realm and God's World—Buddha's Atheism—The Heavenly Father—Contrast between Buddhist and Christian View of Good and Evil—Buddhistic Cosmogony and Science—The Bible and Science—Buddhism and Christianity in their Influence on the World—Attitude towards Women—Buddhism and Christianity in Reference to Death. 3. Influence of Buddhism on Christianity—Supposed Resemblances between Gospel Passages and Buddhist Writings—Parable of the Mustard Seed—Greater Resemblance to Teaching of Greek Philosophers—Professor Rhys Davids' Opinion—Influence of Buddhism on Corrupt Forms of Christianity—Barlaam and Josaphat—Monastic System—Lamaism and the Papacy—Gnosticism—Manichæism—Apocryphal Gospels and Mahâyâna Books—'Romantic History of Buddha'—Uncertain Date of Buddhist Works—Harnack on the Date of the New Testament Writings—Metteyo Buddha—Conclusion	160—201
--	---------

NOTE ON BUDDHA'S BIRTH	202
------------------------	-----

BIBLIOGRAPHY	207
--------------	-----



# INTRODUCTION

GREAT as has been the progress made by the civilized world in our own times in learning and science of every kind, theoretical and practical, in no department of study have greater facilities for progress been afforded than in that of Comparative Religion. If we have not advanced as much in this matter as in Medicine, in Telegraphy, in Mechanics, it is perhaps because we have not been equally earnest in our endeavours, and have not employed the true scientific method. The study has perhaps been left too much to men with some very decided bias, often an anti-Christian one, and their efforts have too often been directed, not to eliciting the truth from carefully observed facts, but to establishing some preconceived theory of their own. They have been followed by distinguished essayists and novelists, men and women of great literary ability, but with no particular training in this important branch of study, possibly without any great knowledge of languages and of philosophy to qualify them for conducting a careful and scientific investigation into such a deep and abstruse subject. Sciolists have then entered the field, and, in the most light and airy manner, have—to their own complete satisfaction, and with the smallest possible modicum of thought and study—settled for ever those

deepest of all questions which for ages have occupied the attention, and too frequently baffled the investigation, of some of the most thoughtful of the human race. Busy men too frequently accept the lucubrations of such writers or talkers as representing proved and generally accepted facts, and hence their faith in Christianity becomes shaken, and nothing definite is given to put in its place.

The cure for this is that the study of the surviving non-Christian religions and philosophies of the East should be undertaken in earnest—at least as much so as that of the ancient philosophies of Greece and Rome. Instead of that, what do we see? Men ignorant of Greek would never venture to express an opinion upon the philosophies of Plato, of Aristotle, of Zeno, and would not be listened to if they did. But anyone without the slightest knowledge of Pālī may set himself up as an exponent of Buddhism, and may even persuade people to accept him as an authority upon the subject. Surely this is not as it ought to be.

There is a deep difference between Religion and Philosophy, it is true, yet they are sufficiently near akin to one another in many respects to render it possible to study both in somewhat the same manner. They both profess to solve some of the most important problems of existence, the difference being that philosophies are avowedly mere human guesses at their solution, while religions claim to be Divine revelations. Nor is it unreasonable to suppose that perhaps such a claim may have some foundation in fact—that the different non-Christian faiths may enshrine, so to speak, some fragments of Divine truth, perhaps some scanty reminiscences of an early Revelation. But whether this be so or not, they claim our reverent and thoughtful study as





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



such a 'raft' is not enough to carry man safely over the ocean of existence, but that 'some word of God'—nay, rather, 'The Word of God' Himself—is requisite.

The thoughtful man of the present day can no longer content himself with the scoff which declares that to the ignorant every religion is equally true, to the philosopher equally false, and to the politician equally useful. Those who, in accordance with the false liberality of our own time, profess to look upon all religions as alike good for those who believe in them, may at least learn from the *study* of these faiths that this view is not the outcome of learning, but of ignorance. True learning explodes this idea, as it has exploded many other similar fallacies. While a modicum of truth may be found in all religions and in all philosophies, the honest student will soon learn that, in order properly to estimate the value of any system, and even to understand its teachings aright, it is not enough to cull pretty-sounding sentences or lofty moral sentiments from its leading books. Men have often done this, and then, reading Christian meanings into words expressive of very different ideas, given them forth to the world as proving that men do not need the Gospel. The honest and the only profitable course is to study the system as a *whole*, endeavouring to ascertain the exact meaning of each maxim, taking the bad with the good, and thus forming a fair judgment on the whole system of religion or philosophy which we are studying. In these lectures it will be seen how easy it is to misunderstand, *e.g.*, such Buddhist terms as 'Immortality' (*amata*), 'Law,' 'Ignorance,' and many others, if they are taken apart from their context. Nor, again, can theory be separated from practice. Each religion especially, to be properly understood and judged, must be historically studied in its origin and its growth, in its development and its

decay ; and the teaching of history regarding the influence for good or ill which it has, *when its precepts have been carried into practice*, exercised on its professors, must be taken into account as well, for ‘ the tree is known by his fruit.’

While something may doubtless be learnt (as we shall see) from Buddhism, just as (though not to the same extent as) from Platonism, Aristotelianism, the philosophy of Kant, or any other such system, yet the recognition of this fact does not compel us to applaud the attempts that are even now being made in certain quarters to revive Buddhism in its original form. To do this is to endeavour to put back the hands of the clock of the world’s history, of the human understanding. As well—nay, better far—attempt to revive Platonism, a far nobler philosophy. Why should we not, on the same principle, try to re-establish the Copernican theory, or strive to bring once more into vogue the medical system of Galen and Hippocrates? The fact is that these systems, whether of Science or of Philosophy, have had their day, and to electrify them into even a semblance of vitality is impossible. Their work is done, the world has outgrown them. The Buddhism which it is attempted to revive is not really believed in even by the most zealous of its Western advocates.

The stream can rise no higher than its source. A revived Buddhism could not attain a higher moral or intellectual level than that occupied by Buddha himself in what were dark ages indeed in comparison with our own. We have seen what comes of such revivals under far more favourable circumstances in connexion with another faith, a religion and not a philosophy—the Muḥammadan. Made not by outsiders but by earnest believers in the creed, such attempts have resulted in the



production of a Mahdî, a Khalîfeh, a Mad Mullâ, who have very fairly reproduced the character and the conduct of Muḥammad. A revival of pristine Buddhism might, if successful, show us characters more peaceful, it is true, but not less out of place at the present period of the world's history.

The world has not yet outgrown the Jesus of the Evangelists, and does not seem very likely soon to do so. If, therefore, those who long to revive *something*, and 'to work some deliverance in the earth,' would strive to revive in men's hearts something of the old faith and zeal, of the love and devotion, of early Christian times, they would be more likely to see their efforts crowned with success, they would be doing infinitely more good to their fellow-men, and be bringing nearer that glorious and now, perhaps, not so very

'far-off Divine event,  
To which the whole creation moves.'

# LECTURE I

## LIFE AND WORK OF THE BUDDHA

‘Majjhena Tathāgato dhammaṃ deseti.’

‘Fecisti nos ad Te: et inquietum est cor nostrum, donec requiescat in Te.’—AUGUSTINE: *Conf.*, lib. i., § 1.

THE period at which Buddhism arose in India was one which, whether we consider it from a political or from an intellectual standpoint, must undoubtedly be regarded as one of the most remarkable in the history of the world. The fall of Babylon in B.C. 538, when the Persian Empire under Cyrus arose on the ruins of the Assyrio-Babylonian, was one of the great turning-points in history, for it marked the passing away of the temporal power of the Semites and the accession of the Âryan (Japhetic) family of nations to the sovereignty of the world. In a somewhat similar manner, though more gradually, had the Semites themselves, more than a thousand years previously, wrested the pre-eminence from Accadians, Elamites, and Egyptians, members of another great division of the human race, known in the Bible as the Hamitic family. From the time of Cyrus to the present day the world has been ruled by the Âryan race, and their elevation to this exalted position took place in the lifetime of Gotamo Buddha.

The same period which witnessed the growing political ascendancy of the Âryan family of nations—that which

may be approximately included between the sixth and the fifth centuries before the Christian era—was noted for its fertility in the deepest religious and philosophical thought. To it we trace back the origin of Hellenic as well as that of Indian philosophy. And, although our ignorance of the time at which Zoroaster lived renders it impossible to assert with any certainty that the great religious and intellectual movement associated with his name coincided with the period of which we are now speaking, yet much may be said in favour of such a supposition. Nor was this great outburst of mental, and in some measure of spiritual, earnestness and effort by any means confined to the Âryan nations, as we learn from a study of the contemporary Chinese<sup>1</sup> and Hebrew writings. Over the whole, or nearly the whole, of the civilized world at that epoch there seems to have brooded a spirit of inquiry which is perhaps without a parallel in the intellectual history of mankind. With its results, as far as the Western world is concerned, all students of Greek philosophy are acquainted. Completely independent, doubtless, of the almost contemporary movement of Grecian thought, there gradually diffused itself in India at the time of which we write, and perhaps somewhat previously, a very general feeling of dissatisfaction with the religious doctrines of the Brâhmanical faith—of unbelief in the deities then worshipped by the Indian Âryans. This gave rise to a desire to obtain by thought and investigation some more satisfactory answer to the great problem of human existence and of human suffering than was afforded by the hymns of the Rîg Veda, the earliest ethnic scripture of the Âryan family, written in an ancient dialect, the meaning of which had almost ceased to be understood. Times had very

<sup>1</sup> Confucius was born in 551 B.C., and died in B.C. 478. Lao-tse was his contemporary and that of Buddha.

materially changed since the early Âryan conquerors of the Panjâb had poured forth their simple prayers to the gods of the elements and the great powers of Nature, as represented by Indra, Agni, the Maruts, the Âdityas, and similar deities. Men felt that there was, even in this world, something more necessary to render them truly happy than abundant herds of cattle, bountiful harvests, and victory over their foes. The lofty<sup>1</sup> conceptions of certain Divine attributes, which in early ages had been embodied in the Dyaush-pitâ and the Varuṇa of the Vedas, had now faded from men's minds along with much else of the ancient Âryan heritage of truth ; nor had they been able to replace these by any fuller and more realistic ideas regarding the Divine nature. On the other hand, their recognition of the existence of physical, mental, and moral evil in themselves and in the world at large, which knowledge had already to some degree found expression in more than one of the early hymns, had deepened. Thus, their lives and hearts had become darkened both by the loss of the realization of the Divine and by the acquisition of more correct ideas about man's actual condition in this life. The meaning of the sacrificial cultus of ancient times had been lost in the course of centuries. For these, among other reasons, thoughtful men felt their need of some fuller and more definite knowledge with regard to both this world and the next than the theories of the Upanishads could supply. Hence there gradually arose the six great systems of Hindū philosophy,<sup>2</sup> which

<sup>1</sup> See that grand hymn R̥ig-Veda x. 121.

<sup>2</sup> Called respectively the Sâṅkhya, the Yoga, the Nyâya, the Vaiseshika, the Mîmâṃsâ, and the Vedânta *darṣanas*. All these systems, as we have them, are post-Christian. But 'it seems likely that the founders of the six systems of philosophy . . . belonged to the same period of philosophical and religious fermentation which gave rise to the first spreading of Buddha's doctrines in India' (M. Müller,

## THE NOBLE EIGHTFOLD PATH

testify to the immense amount of thought which the Indian mind in those ancient times had devoted to such matters. But even these philosophical systems,<sup>1</sup> though they appealed to a far larger portion of the community than did the philosophies of ancient Hellas, were far from satisfying even the intellectual, much less the moral and spiritual, needs of the mass of men. Perhaps they were dimly conscious that they required a religion in which they could truly believe, a revelation of God to the human heart. And, despairing of obtaining this, forgetting even God's existence, men fancied that they could by abstruse thought discover at least something more satisfying than anything which had yet been found. The Indian mind longed and sought for the best of all possible philosophies, hoping thereby, as on a raft (to use

---

'Six Systems of Indian Philosophy,' p. 117). It is probable that Jainism is more ancient than Buddhism (*vide, inter alia*, Thomas, 'The Early Faith of Aśoka'), and doubtless exercised a great influence upon Buddha's mind. But we have not sufficient material to enable us to ascertain with precision what the very earliest Jaina tenets were.

<sup>1</sup> The question as to whether Buddha borrowed from any of these philosophies has been much discussed. Max Müller has pointed out that many ideas were common to all of these systems of philosophy, and that this common substratum had worked itself into the Indian mind in Buddha's time. This accounts for such resemblances as may be traced at times between Buddha's doctrines and now one, now another, of these philosophies ('The Six Systems of Indian Philosophy,' p. 137). Elsewhere he says: 'We have looked in vain for any definite similarities between the system of Kapila, as known to us in the Sāṅkhya-sūtras, and the Abhidharma or metaphysics of the Buddhists' ('Chips from a German Workshop,' vol. i., p. 226). Oldenberg ('Buddha,' English translation, p. 92, note) agrees with this dictum. Regarding the meaning of the word 'Abhidharma' (in Pāli 'Abhidh. ammo'), however, Professor Rhys Davids rightly denies that the term should be translated 'metaphysics.'





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



## THE NOBLE EIGHTFOLD PATH

For, indeed, nothing short of this was what Buddha aimed at achieving, and doubtless believed that he had achieved. Brâhmanism, in its earliest form, had originally been exclusively the faith of the Âryan conquerors of Hindûstân ; and, although the descendants of the conquered might be permitted to attach themselves to one or other of the numerous lower castes which gradually arose, yet, even as early as the Laws of Manu, we find that none but members of the three highest (the original Âryan) castes were permitted to hear the words of the Vedas.<sup>1</sup> Any transgression of this rule, even when purely accidental, was severely, even inhumanly, punished. All foreigners, or *Mlechhas*, were beyond the pale ; and the idea of admitting them to the full religious privileges of the Hindûs seems never even to have occurred to the most enlightened of the Brâhmans. The nearest approach to anything of the kind is to be found in the fact that the mendicant ascetic teachers, having left the world, did not recognise among their disciples any distinction of caste. Doubtless it was because all the members of the Order which he founded were mendicants that Buddha acted on the same principle, and not from any opposition to either the Brâhmans or to caste in general. But the fact remains that Buddha admitted to the ranks of his disciples, and to instruction in the law which he inculcated, all who desired it, to whatever nationality or caste they might belong.<sup>2</sup> In going far beyond the limits of India in

<sup>1</sup> Manu, Dharmaśâstra, book i. The laws of Manu are now supposed to have assumed their present form between 500 and 300 years before Christ, though the Hindûs ascribe to them a great antiquity. But they doubtless contain regulations which had been in force for centuries before they were written down and codified.

<sup>2</sup> He afterwards modified this in practice by forbidding the admission to the Order of certain classes of persons.

later times to proclaim the new faith, the monks of his Order were but carrying out the wishes and putting into practice the principles which their teacher had taught them. Nay, more, they believed that they were but obeying his express command.<sup>1</sup> In order properly to estimate the importance of Buddha's action in the matter, we must remember that no previous attempt had ever been made in the history of the world to found anything of the nature of a universal religion. Judaism, it is true, contained within those of its sacred books which existed before Buddha's time the Divine promise that, in future ages, all the nations of the world would receive blessing through the coming Saviour; but Judaism itself was as strictly limited to the Chosen People as was any other of the great national religions to the nation which professed it. It is a great proof of Buddha's liberality of sentiment as well as of his sincere conviction of the vital importance of the doctrines which he inculcated, and of their unfailing efficacy when carried out in practice, that he ventured to conceive such a grand philanthropic scheme. And it is not too much to say that the very fact that, for many centuries after his death, his disciples so successfully endeavoured by peaceful<sup>2</sup> means to pro-

<sup>1</sup> Mahāvaggo, i., § 11, 1; § 12, 1, etc.

<sup>2</sup> This does not imply that force was *never* used to spread Buddhism in India. Aśoka's language seems at least to suggest that he employed something more than merely moral influence. He says that, 'during the year and more' that had elapsed since he began to exert himself for the spread of the faith, 'those gods that were [held to be] true gods in Jambudvīpa [India] have been made [to be regarded as] men and false' — 'Etena cha aṃtalena Jambudīpasi aṃmisam devā[hu]sam ta munisā misam devakaṭā' (Sahasrām Edict). So also in the Rūpnāth Edict he says: 'Yi imāya kālāya Jambudīpasi amisā devā-husu te dāni masā kaṭā' — 'Those [supposed] true gods which at this time were in Jambudvīpa are now made [to be regarded as] false.' (See Bühler's 'Three New Edicts of Aśoka,' pp. 25-27.)



pagate the tenets they had embraced proves that Buddhism had shown itself to be in some respects a great advance upon the attempts previously made in India to answer some of the great questions of the human mind and spirit. We are prepared, therefore, to find in the teaching of Buddha some elements of truth, however much error of one kind or another may be found mingled therewith. While gladly recognising these truths or half-truths, it will, however, be our endeavour not to permit ourselves to be, through any false liberality of thought, blinded to the existence of those errors in Buddhism which ultimately led to its extinction in the land of its birth. Nor should we fail to learn from the noble aspirations, the self-sacrificing life, and the many wise words of Buddha, as well as from his errors and failures, some lessons which may be useful to us in our own day and generation. A knowledge of the real nature and teachings of Buddhism should lead every thoughtful and earnest student to value more highly than ever before the Dayspring from on high which has visited us, to guide our feet into the way of peace.

At the very threshold of our inquiries it is of the first importance to a right understanding of Buddhism to remember the dread fact that, ere Buddha's time, India had entirely lost all true knowledge of God. So completely had all real belief in Him faded away, that in the whole of the literature of early Buddhism we fail to find any clear trace of the consciousness of the very possibility of His existence. Pantheism had, in the minds of all thoughtful men, developed into practical atheism. The Brâhmanical creed, *Ekamevâdvitīyam*, 'There is One Being, without a second,' resolved all things into the Deity—or, rather, into what the Greeks would call

τὸ θεῖον, an impersonal, unconscious being, the *Sad-a-sat*<sup>1</sup> (Existent non-Existent)—and held that all the visible Universe was *Māyā*<sup>2</sup> or Illusion. In such a system there was no room for a Creator, and even human personality was considered a delusion. This was the general belief of the society in which Buddha was born, and it exerted a very great influence upon his whole system of philosophy. It was doubtless for this reason that the two great questions which presented themselves to Thales<sup>3</sup> and other early Greek philosophers as imperatively demanding solution—the problem of the genesis of the Universe and the Nature of God—did not seem to Buddha deserving of serious attention. Yet the fact of the existence of a world of suffering, misery, and hopelessness was very patent to Buddha, and with

<sup>1</sup> ‘Det begynnelselösa högsta Brahman kallas icke varande och icke icke-varande’ (Eikund, ‘Nirvâṇa,’ p. 75, quoting from Dahlmann, ‘Nirvâṇa,’ p. 54). Cf. Bhagavadgîta, xi., śl. 37, where Arjuna, addressing Kṛishṇa, says :

‘Ananta deveṣa jagannivâsa

Tvam aksharam, *sadasat*, tat param yat.’

<sup>2</sup> This was in particular the doctrine of the Vedânta philosophy, but it largely affected the Sâṅkhya school also. The Bhagavadgîta and several Upanishads are connected with both systems: ‘In der Philosophie des Mahâbhârata—ihre technische Benennung ist Sâṃkhya-Yoga—ist Brahman noch immer dasselbe einige, ewige Sein, wie es in den Upanishaden verkündigt wird’ (Eikund, ‘Nirvâṇa,’ résumé, p. vi).

<sup>3</sup> Μέρη δὲ φιλοσοφίας τρία, φυσικόν, ἠθικόν, διαλεκτικόν. φυσικόν μὲν τὸ περὶ κόσμου καὶ τῶν ἐν αὐτῷ · ἠθικόν δὲ τὸ περὶ βίου καὶ τῶν πρὸς ἡμᾶς · διαλεκτικόν δὲ τὸ ἀμφοτέρων τοὺς λόγους πρεσβεύον. καὶ μέχρι μὲν Ἀρχελάου τὸ φυσικόν εἶδος ἦν · ἀπὸ δὲ Σωκράτους . . . τὸ ἠθικόν · ἀπὸ δὲ Ζήνωνος τοῦ Ἐλεάτου τὸ διαλεκτικόν (Diogenes Laertius, ‘Vit. Phil.,’ Proœmium xiii. 18). Thales held water to be the origin of all things (*ibid.*, lib. i., vi. 27), but among his recorded sayings are : Πρεσβύτατον τῶν ὄντων, θεός · ἀγέννητον γάρ. κάλλιστον, κόσμος · ποίημα γὰρ θεοῦ (*loc. cit.*, lib. i., ix. 35).

regard to that matter, at least, he parted company with the philosophy of his time. He felt that regarding *that* fact there was no illusion, and upon belief in it his whole system was founded. The one great task which he set himself with all his might to accomplish was, Given the existence of a world of suffering, to find the cause of that suffering and the way to escape from it.<sup>1</sup> As has well been said,<sup>2</sup> 'His object was to get rid of the terrible burden of an existence without God and without hope,' which he felt to be 'all the more grievous because—on the theory of a belief in the transmigration of the soul or of repeated births—life does not end with physical death.' To Buddha life seemed not only to be entirely devoid of an object, and therefore valueless, but a curse instead of a blessing. But while all the happiness of life seemed delusory, or even worse, yet 'all that causes suffering—birth, sickness, death, separation from what is dear to us and union with what is hateful'<sup>3</sup>—remained. 'And this stream of misery and tears extends backwards to all eternity . . . and stretches forward to all the eternities. This is what is implied in the ceaseless passing of all beings . . . into life, until they die, and again from death, by means of repeated births, into a new existence full of suffering.' Buddha sought, and professed to have found, for himself and for all who would learn from him, a means of deliverance from this chain of existence, which, under such circumstances and

<sup>1</sup> 'Der Buddhismus ist eine Philosophie des Leidens und der Erlösung. Die Überzeugung von dem Elende des Daseins und das durchdringende Gefühl der Erlösungsbedürftigkeit geben dem Buddhismus Gestalt und Farbe' (J. Dahlmann, 'Buddha,' p. 15).

<sup>2</sup> Grau, 'The Goal of the Human Race,' English translation, pp. 145 *et seq.*

<sup>3</sup> Grau, *op. cit.*, pp. 146, 147; *cf.* Oldenberg, 'Buddha: sein Leben, seine Lehre, seine Gemeinde,' p. 258 *et seq.*

apart from God, he rightly deemed to be never-ending misery and despair. In judging his system of philosophy, we must not forget at what he aimed<sup>1</sup> and under what circumstances he arrived at the conclusions which he reached.

The exact date at which Buddha lived has only recently been discovered. On the evidence of the inscriptions of King Aṣoka Piyadassi (*Priyadarshin*), Professor Bühler<sup>2</sup> fixes the year of his death at B.C. 477-478.

<sup>1</sup> The aim of the Sâṅkhya school of Kapila was very similar, for in Isvara-Kṛishṇa's 'Sâṅkhya-Kârikâ' the leading principle of the philosophy of Kapila is thus stated :

‘Duḥkhatrayâbhighâtâjjijñâsâ tadapaghâtake hetau’ (verse 1).

‘From the assault of the threefold kinds of suffering [arises] the desire to know the method by which they may be repelled.’

The Bhagavadgita shows that other questions more akin to Greek philosophy occurred to other minds, for there we find Arjuna asking Kṛishṇa :

‘Kiṁ tad brahma, kiṁ adyâtmaṁ, kiṁ karma, purushottama ?  
Adhibhûtaṁ ca kiṁ proktam, adhidaivaṁ kiṁ ucyate ?  
Adhiyajñah kathaṁ ko 'tra dehe 'smin, Madhusûdana ?  
Prayâṇakâle ca kathaṁ jñeyo 'si niyatâtmabhîh ?’

‘What is that *brahman* [= *θεῖον*], what the Over-soul, what *karma*, O best of beings ?

‘And what is the so-called Over-existent, what is the Over-fate called ?

‘How and what is the Over-sacrifice here in this body, O destroyer of Madhu ?

‘And at the time of expiring, how art thou to be known to humble [bound] souls ?’

The ‘threefold kinds of suffering’ referred to in the Sâṅkhya philosophy are respectively the suffering which originates from one’s self, that caused by animate things of this world, and that produced by the action of the deities (*devas*).

<sup>2</sup> Bühler (‘Three New Edicts of Asoka,’ p. 20) says that he agrees with Professor Max Müller, General Cunningham, and others, on the



His birth therefore occurred in B.C. 557-558, as he is said to have lived for eighty<sup>1</sup> years. Tradition states that the place of his birth was a grove named Lumbinī,<sup>2</sup> near the city of Kapilavastu,<sup>3</sup> at the foot of Mount Pālpa in the Himâlaya ranges, within the present territory of Nipāl. The traditional spot has quite recently been discovered, and an inscription of King Piyadassi (Aṣoka)<sup>4</sup> found there states that, in the twentieth year of his reign, the King visited the spot, which on the stone itself he calls 'the birthplace of Śākya<sup>5</sup>-Muni.' His father, Suddhodanṇo, is termed in the Buddhavaṃso<sup>6</sup> a rājā,

---

evidence of the Edicts, in believing that the date of the Nirvâṇa of Buddha is B.C. 477-478. 'If, therefore,' he adds, 'the date 477-478 for the Nirvâṇa should eventually be proved to be wrong, the fault cannot be more than five or six years one way or the other.'

<sup>1</sup> In his last year, in the verses quoted in the notes to p. 17, he speaks of having lived fifty years since he left home at the age of twenty-nine. Again, in Mahâparinibbâna-Suttaṃ, p. 23, when about to die, he says he is eighty years old (*vide* p. 57, below).

<sup>2</sup> 'Jâto Sakyânam game janapade Lampuneyye' (Nālakasuttaṃ). The place is still called 'Rumin-dei' — *i.e.*, Lumbinī Devī. See on the subject an article by Birdwood in the *Buddhist*, Colombo, October 1, 1897; also 'Sitzungsberichte der Königlich : Preussischen Akademie der Wissenschaften zu Berlin,' 1897, p. 594, and authorities quoted by Gründwedel, 'Mythologie des Buddhismus,' p. 197, note 5.

<sup>3</sup> In Pālī 'Kapilavatthu.' This small city stood on the banks of the little river Rohinī (still called by the same name), probably, as Dr. Hoey thinks, somewhere near Taulīhwā, a Nepalese Tahsīlī station between the Jamwār and Bāngangā Rivers, about seven miles north of the British frontier. The Aciravatī, a river often mentioned in the Buddhist Scriptures, is now known as the Rapti.

<sup>4</sup> Aṣoka reigned from B.C. 257 to 220.

<sup>5</sup> This title of Buddha merely means 'the Ascetic of the Śākya tribe' (see below).

<sup>6</sup> Buddhavaṃsa, xxvi. 13 :

'Nagaram Kapilavatthu me rājā Suddhodano pitā,  
Mayham janettikā mātā Māyā devī ti vuccati.'





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



Siddhârtha (in Pāli, Siddhattho), but he is also often styled Gautama (in Pāli, Gotamo), which seems to have been a family name. Māyā, we are informed, died seven<sup>1</sup> days after her son's birth, and he was brought up by her sister,<sup>2</sup> his foster-mother, Mahāprajāpatī (in Pāli, Mahāpajāpatī), who was herself also one of Suddhodano's wives. The sacred books of the southern Buddhists, which alone afford any information on the subject worthy of even the slightest consideration, contain no biography of the noble youth,<sup>3</sup> the nearest approach to one being the short account in verse found in the twenty-sixth chapter of the Buddhavaṃso. But certain details are to be found scattered about among the other books<sup>4</sup> of the Southern Canon. His youth was passed at Kapilavastu or in its neighbourhood, but the early Buddhist records tell us nothing whatever

<sup>1</sup> This is often asserted in the Pāli books. On Buddha's birth, see note at the end of the fourth lecture.

<sup>2</sup> Cullavaggo, A. I, 3.

<sup>3</sup> The story of the child's presentation to the Rishi Asito (Nālaka-suttam of the Sutta-Nipāto), or Kāladevalo (Jāt. Attḥ, i., p. 54), is evidently of later origin. It underwent great amplification in later times still (*vide* Beal, 'Romantic History of Buddha,' p. 56 *et seq.*), but even in the introduction to the Jātaka the legendary nature of the story is evident. It begins thus: 'On this same day the happy and delighted hosts of the Heaven of the Thirty-three held a celebration, waving their cloaks and giving other signs of joy, because to King Suddhodano in Kapilavatthu had been born a son who should sit at the foot of the Bo-tree and become a Buddha. Now it came to pass at that time that an ascetic named Kāladevalo . . . went, after his daily meal, to the Heaven of the Thirty-three to take his noon-day rest,' etc. (from Warren's translation, 'Buddhism in Translations,' pp. 48, 49).

<sup>4</sup> *E.g.*, in the Cullavaggo, the Aṅguttara-Nikāyo, and the Mahāpari-nibbāna-Suttam; also, mixed with many wonderful fables of later growth, in the Acchariyabahutasuttam of the Majjh.-Nikāyo. *Cf.* also accounts in the Dīgh.-Nik., Sutta-Nipāto, Mahāvaggo, Saṃyut.-Nik., etc.

of the philosophical studies to which he is sometimes supposed to have devoted himself. He resided with his father during the winter, summer, and the rainy season in one or another of the three<sup>1</sup> country-seats which early tradition has dignified with the title of 'palaces.' In accordance with the custom of early marriage, which then existed in India as it does now, he was married probably at the age of sixteen or seventeen years. We are uncertain as to the number of his wives. The Buddhavaṃso represents him as stating that he possessed no fewer than 40,000 of them,<sup>2</sup> but one is especially mentioned as the mother of Rāhulo, his only recorded

<sup>1</sup> Maj.-Nik., 75; so also in Aṅg.-Nik., quoted below, and Buddhavaṃso, xxvi. 14. This was customary in rich families (Cull., vii. 1, 1); compare what is said of the rich youth Yaso (Mahāvaggo, i. 7, 1). Of course, this account of Buddha's palaces may be borrowed from this latter passage, as from this very passage is borrowed (in the *Lalita-Vistara*, p. 521; *Jātaka*, i., p. 61, etc.) the story of Buddha's disgust at seeing the dishevelled condition of the sleeping women (so Rhys Davids and Oldenberg think: 'Sacred Books of the East,' vol. xiii., p. 102). In the Aṅg.-Nik. Buddha gives the following account of his early luxury: 'Sukhumālo ahaṃ, bhikkhave, paramasukhumālo accanta-sukhumālo. Mama sukhaṃ, bhikkhave, pitu nivesane pokkharaniyo hāriyākā honti; ekattha sukhaṃ, bhikkhave, uppalaṃ vappati, ekattha padumaṃ, ekattha puṇṇarikaṃ, yāvad evaṃ atthāya. Na kho pana es' ahaṃ, bhikkhave, kāsikaṃ candanaṃ dhāremi, kāsikaṃ, bhikkhave, su me taṃ veṭhanaṃ hoti, kāsikā kañcukā, kāsikaṃ nivāsanaṃ, kāsiko uttarāsaṅgo. Rattidivaṃ kho pana me su taṃ, bhikkhave, setachattaṃ dhāreyya mā naṃ phussi sitaṃ vā, uṇhaṃ vā, tiṇaṃ vā, rajo vā, ussāvo vā, ti.' Tassa mayhaṃ, bhikkhave, tayo pāsādā ahesuṃ, eko hemantiko, eko gimhantiko, eko vassiko ti. So kho ahaṃ, bhikkhave, vassikapāsāde vassike cattāro māse nippurisehi turīyehi paricāriyamāno na heṭṭha pāsādā orohāmi. Yathā kho pana, bhikkhave, aññesaṃ nivesane dāsakammakarāporisassa kaṇājakam bhojanaṃ diyyati bilaṅga-dutiyam evaṃ eva su me, bhikkhave, pitu nivesane dāsakammakarāporisassa sālīmaṃsodano diyyati' (quoted by Oldenberg, 'Buddha,' p. 418).

<sup>2</sup> Buddhavaṃso, xxvi., canto 15.



child. Traditions differ as to the name she bore. That which has been most generally adopted by European scholars is Yasodharā,<sup>1</sup> but this name is not given to her in the canonical Pāli books, where she is sometimes spoken of as Bhaddakaccā.<sup>2</sup> The fact that in the sacred books she is generally styled simply Rāhulamātā,<sup>3</sup> 'the mother of Rāhulo,' makes it probable that even in very early times her name was unknown.

This is all that can be stated with any certainty about Buddha's early life. From the time of his marriage until he attained the age of twenty-nine years he lived the life of a 'householder,' and no event of that period is known to us except the mere fact of his son's birth. Nor do the more ancient Pāli books afford us the information at precisely what time before he left his home his son Rāhulo was born. But not long after the recluse had attained Buddhahood, when his visit to his home is mentioned, his son is called 'young<sup>4</sup> Rāhulo.' This does not conflict with the later legend, which states that the child was an infant<sup>5</sup> when the 'Great Renunciation' took place.

<sup>1</sup> *E.g.*, by Sir Edwin Arnold in the 'Light of Asia'; also by Mon. Williams, 'Buddha,' p. 25. She is so called in the 'Romantic History.'

<sup>2</sup> Buddhavaṃso, xxvi. 15. Childers (Pāli Dictionary, *s.v.*) says she is mentioned in the Pāli books also as 'Bhaddakaccāna.' In the books of the Mahāyāna, or 'Great Vehicle,' which are held as canonical by the Northern Buddhists, though they are of very late date as compared with those of the Southern Canon, she is often called 'Gopā.' She is called 'Yasodharā' in the Buddha-carita (i. 26, 46, *et passim*). *Vide* the subject discussed in Rhys Davids' 'Buddhism' (Non-Christian Religious Systems Series), p. 50 *et seq.*

<sup>3</sup> This is so even in the Jātaka (i. 58, 60, etc.).

<sup>4</sup> Mahāvaggo, i. 54, 1, 2.

<sup>5</sup> This is stated also in the introduction to the Jātaka (i. 60 *et seq.*). We are there told that Buddha named his son Rāhulo, or a 'hindrance,'

When Siddhârtha was twenty-nine<sup>1</sup> years of age, leaving his home and all the pleasures of life, he retired into the wilderness, and became an ascetic anchoret. At that time in India there was nothing at all uncommon in such conduct, nor has the practice of thus retiring from the world by any means ceased in the India of our own time. The laws of Manu enjoin that every Brâhmaṇ shall spend his old age as a solitary ascetic. This, doubtless, was a practice which was in vogue for centuries before those laws were drawn up in their present form. It was incumbent upon Brâhmaṇs, because their priestly caste seemed to make it more natural for them than for others to leave the things of the world and to aim at attaining union with the Divine. But this same course was the only one open to any man at all anxious about spiritual things, if he wished to attain to calm of heart. Asceticism, coupled with meditation, was then, and had for ages been, considered to be the one means of freeing one's self from the fetters of existence, the necessary condition for spiritual progress. Buddha was not himself a Brâhmaṇ by caste; yet under these circumstances we may well understand that he, feeling the vanity of all mere earthly joys and sensual pleasures, and finding therein nothing to quench the thirst of his spirit, was readily drawn to follow the usual procedure in

---

evidently because likely to bind him to worldly life (*Bodhisatto tam sutvā*, — the news of his son's birth, — *Kāhulo jāto, bandhanam jātān-ti ūha : loc. cit.*).

<sup>1</sup> Buddhavaṃso, xxvi. 14. So also in Mahâparinibbâna-Suttaṃ it is stated in the verses :

‘Ekûnatimso vayasâ, Subhadda,  
 Yaṃ pabbajim kimkusalanvesî.  
 Vassâni paññâsasamâdhikâni  
 Yato ahaṃ pabbajito, Subhadda,  
 Ñâyassa dhammassa padasavattî.’

such cases. Many, both before and after him in all ages and in all lands, having learnt that the world cannot give them peace of heart, have similarly determined to forsake the world with all its joys and sorrows, its pleasures and its temptations, and to seek for something higher and nobler than the things of sense.

The reason for his retirement from the world will become clearer if we for a moment glance at some of the leading philosophical ideas of the time.

Plato has well and truly observed of the Greek nation that their great characteristic was the love of knowledge.<sup>1</sup> This is in great measure true of other divisions of the Âryan race as well, but it certainly holds good even more of the Indian Âryans than of those of ancient Hellas. Hence perhaps it is that the philosophy of the Upanishads makes Ignorance (*Avidyā*) the cause of so many of the evils of life. Not only does each of the sacred books of the Brâhmaṇs bear the title of *Veda* (Knowledge), but in India, in early ages as well as at present, *Knowledge* is supposed to possess magical efficacy, especially such knowledge as enables its possessor to burst the bands<sup>2</sup> of Illusion (*Māyā*) and to recognise the truth of the Hindū creed, *Ekamevādvitīyam*, thereby attaining to *yoga* or *union* with the *Paramâtmâ*, the Supreme Soul, the only truly existent Being. The supposed efficacy of Knowledge was, in the opinion of the Hindūs, rivalled only by that of austerity, or asceticism (*tapas*, self-torture), which might even be

<sup>1</sup> 'De Republica,' book iv., § 11.

<sup>2</sup> So in the Sâṅkhya philosophy the *Purusha*, ultimately by *Knowledge* (*Jñānam*), reaches the conviction of his own non-existence :

'Evaṃ tattvābhyāsānnāsmi na me nāhamityaparīśeṣaḥ :  
Aviparyayādviśuddhaṃ kevalamutpadyate jñānam '

'Sâṅkhya-Kârikâ,' verse 64.

carried so far as to exalt the Brâhmaṇ ascetic above the gods themselves. Sanskrit poetry is full of tales of how certain Brâhmaṇs<sup>1</sup> not only ventured to enter into contest with the gods for supremacy in virtue of their austerities, but even caused the gods to quake for their power, and compelled them to devise temptations for the Brâhmaṇs in order to induce the latter to relax their exertions. Buddha would therefore naturally hold it as a fact requiring no proof that, either by means of asceticism or through attaining the requisite degree of knowledge (to be obtained not by study but by intense meditation), he might gain rest and peace, deliverance from passion and from all the transitoriness of worldly joy and sorrow, pleasure and pain. We shall find that he adopted both these methods, the latter only after failing to obtain what he sought by means of the former.

As has already been pointed out, in leaving his home in order to wander about the country as a religious mendicant, Buddha took a step which, while to us Europeans of the twentieth century it may appear strange, seemed quite natural to the people among whom he lived—as, indeed, similar conduct actually does to a Hindū of to-day. But this very fact should lead us to feel the deepest sympathy, not with Siddhârtha alone, but with all those countless myriads—some of them, it may be, in some respects, among the noblest of men—who have deeply felt the pangs of spiritual thirst, that thirst of the soul of the universality of which Homer of old spoke so eloquently,<sup>2</sup> and have known no better than did his heroes where to find the Water of

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* examples in, e.g., Bopp's '*Indralokagamanam, nebst anderen Episodien*,' and '*Diluvium, cum tribus aliis Mahâbhâratae Episodiis*.'

<sup>2</sup> *Πάντες δὲ θεῶν χατέουσ' ἄνθρωποι* ('*Odyss.*,' iii. 48).



Life, wherewith to quench its flames and allay their tortures. It is, we may be sure, no slight longing, no trifling unrest of mind, that forces men to leave all the tender ties of home and family, to forsake all the innocent pleasures as well as the alluring vices of the world, to go forth homeless and friendless, to wander ceaselessly from town to town, from village to village, from one teacher to another it may be, trying to stifle the noblest as well as the lower and baser instincts of humanity, and thus to gain for their desolate souls that peace and rest of heart for which they yearn in vain.

In the *Aṅguttara-Nikāyo*, Siddhârtha, after attaining Buddhahood, is represented as explaining to his disciples the reason why he forsook his home and withdrew from the world. Having described his wealth and the comfort and luxury in which he had been brought up,<sup>1</sup> he spoke thus :

‘Then<sup>2</sup> these thoughts arose with me. “A weak-minded, everyday man, although he is himself liable to decay, and is not free from the power of old age, feels horror, revulsion and disgust, if he sees another person in old age. The horror which he then feels recoils upon himself: I also am subject to decay, and am not free from the power of old age. . . .” While I thus reflected, O mendicants, in my own mind, all that buoyancy of youth, which dwells in the young, sank within me.’ He proceeds to use similar language regarding his thoughts concerning and his dread of sickness and death, and thus concludes, ‘While I, O mendicants, thus reflected in my mind, all that spirit of life which dwells in life sank within me.’ Again, in

<sup>1</sup> See the original quoted in notes to p. 15.

<sup>2</sup> I quote, with but few changes, Oldenberg’s translation (‘Buddha,’ p. 102).





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



young devotee went for instruction to another recluse named Uddako<sup>1</sup> Râmaputto. In each case he expressed his desire to 'walk<sup>2</sup> the religious walk,' according to their respective rules, hoping thus to attain to the *Nirvâṇa*<sup>3</sup> which the Hindūs sought. But, though practising the self-concentration and the other methods which they enjoined until he became exactly like themselves, Siddhârtha ultimately found that he could not thus attain his goal. The conclusion he reached in each case is thus expressed in his own words : ' This Law conducts neither to disgust with the world, nor to release from passion, nor to annihilation, nor to quietude, nor to supernatural knowledge, nor to perfect Buddhahood, nor to Nirvâṇa, while it leads to rebirth in the Realm of Nothingness.' The ' Realm of Nothingness ' is the name of the third of the heavens of the Formless Beings (Arûpabrahmalokâ), and it is so called because its inhabitants believe that nothing exists.<sup>4</sup>

Failing thus to obtain the 'supreme, best state of

<sup>1</sup> Mahāvaggo, i. 5, 2 ; Lal.-Vist., p. 296 *et seq.*

<sup>2</sup> ' Icchâm ' ahaṃ, âvuso, imasmim dhammavinaye brahmacariyaṃ caritun-ti ' (Ariyapariyosâna-Suttaṃ).

<sup>3</sup> The Hindū idea of Nirvâṇa differed considerably from that which Buddha ultimately taught his followers to aim at. It may be briefly explained as consisting of the loss of one's personality in the Divine, or, rather, deliverance from the delusion of personality. See Elkund, ' Nirvâṇa,' p. 75 : ' Nirvâṇa är nu just att blifva detta Brahman, blifva ett därmed, få sitt lif "absorberadt i Brahman." Det är detsamma som att finna och kanna sitt själf, Âtman, såsom Brahman. "Nå Nirvâṇa" och "blifva Brahman" äro ett. "De göra sig lösa från alla söndrande kvaliteter och ingå i det eviga kvalitetslösa varat." ' Vide also Dahlmann, ' Nirvâṇa,' pp. 54, 55, 68.

<sup>4</sup> Childers, Pāli Dictionary, s.v. Âkiñcaññâyatanaṃ. Buddha's words are : ' Tassa mayhaṃ, bhikkave, etad ahosi : Nāyaṃ dhammo nibbidāya, na virāgāya, na nirodhāya, na upasamāya, na abhiññāya, na sambodhāya, na nibbānāya saṃvattati, yāvad eva âkiñcaññâyatanaṃ papattiyaṃ ti ' (Ariyapariyosâna-Suttaṃ).

calm' for which he sought, Siddhârtha then resolved to endeavour to attain it by practising extreme self-mortification. Travelling through Magadha, he reached the town of Uruvelâ,<sup>1</sup> on the banks of the river Nerañjarâ; and there, dwelling in the woods, holding his breath, abstaining almost entirely from food, he strove to obtain the calm for which he longed. Five<sup>2</sup> other ascetics there joined him, but Siddhârtha outstripped them all in his self-inflicted privations, and won their admiration by his devotion to his task. At last, however, finding that he was no nearer his goal, he desisted from this method, and partook of more abundant food. His companions, deeming him a renegade, left him alone in disgust, and went away to Banâras. This period<sup>3</sup> of fruitless search is said to have lasted for seven years, reckoning from the time when Siddhârtha left his home to the date of his enlightenment.

One night, as he sat meditating in the woods near Uruvelâ, under a *pīpal*,<sup>4</sup> or *Ficus religiosa*, since known

<sup>1</sup> Still called 'Urwal'; it stands on the eastern bank of the river Sôn, not far from Buddhagayā, to the south of Patnā. The Nerañjarā (Sanskrit 'Nairāñjarā') is the modern Sôn.

<sup>2</sup> Their names were Koṇḍañño, Vappo, Bhaddiyo, Mahânâmo, and Assaji. See note to Mahāvaggo, i. 6, 5; 'Sacred Books of the East,' vol. xiii., p. 90.

<sup>3</sup> Oldenberg ('Buddha,' p. 420), in support of the statement that seven years elapsed before Buddha's enlightenment, quotes the following passages:

'Satta vassâni Bhagavantam anubandhiṃ padâpadam  
Otâram nâdhigacchissam sambuddhassa satimato.'

Padhâna-Suttam of the Sutta-Nipâto.

'Tena kho pana samayena, Mâro pâpimâ satta vassâni Bhagavantam anubaddho hoti otârâpekho otâram alabhamâno' (Mâra-Samyuttam of the Samy.-Nikâyo, iv., § 4, 2).

The Hindûs regard this tree as sacred, and no one will venture to utter an untruth under a *pīpal*-tree; hence, probably, Buddha chose one to reflect under.



as the Sacred Bo-Tree<sup>1</sup> (*Bodhi-vukkho*, or Tree of Buddhahood), he fell into deep reflection. This resulted in his passing in some mysterious manner from one degree of abstraction to another, until he at last reached omniscience (*sambodhi*), and not only knew the past and future, but also discovered the cause and cure of all human existence and consequent suffering. Only after this had he the right to the title of *Buddha*, or 'the Knower.' His own account runs thus<sup>2</sup>:

'When I thus knew that' (the Four Noble Truths which formed the basis of all his later teaching), 'when I thus beheld that, my mind was released from the defilement of sensual desire, my mind was released from the defilement of earthly existence, my mind was released from the defilement of heresy, my mind was released from the defilement of ignorance. In the emancipated arose the knowledge, "I am emancipated, rebirth is extinct, the religious walk is accomplished, what had to be done is done, there is no more need for this present existence": thus did I perceive.'

The lofty position which Buddha after this claimed for himself is thus stated in the words which he is said<sup>3</sup> to have uttered shortly afterwards in answer to a gymnosophist, Upako of the Âjīvaka sect, who asked him,

<sup>1</sup> A branch of this tree was planted in Ceylon (at Anurâdhapura) in B.C. 288, and is well known to exist there still.

<sup>2</sup> 'Tassa me evaṃ jānato, evaṃ passato, kāmāsavāpi cittaṃ vimuccittha, bhavāsavāpi cittaṃ vimuccittha, diṭṭhāsavāpi cittaṃ vimuccittha, avijjāsavāpi cittaṃ vimuccittha. Vimuttasmiṃ, "Vimutt' ambhīti," ūṇaṃ ahosi, "khīṇa me jāti, vusitaṃ brahmacariyaṃ, kataṃ karaṇīyaṃ, nāparam itthattāyā" ti abbhaññāsim' (Mahāsaccaka-Suttaṃ). Vide also Vibhaṅga-Vinaya Piṭakaṃ, iii., p. 4 *et seq.*; Bhayabherava-Suttaṃ of the Majjh.-Nikāyo; Dvedhāvitaṅga-Suttaṃ of the Majjh.-Nik.; and Oldenberg, 'Buddha,' p. 424.

<sup>3</sup> Mahāvagga, i. 6; 7-9. I have slightly altered the translation given in 'Sacred Books of the East,' vol. xiii., p. 91.

‘Who is thy teacher? Whose doctrine dost thou profess?’ Buddha replied in these words:

‘I have overcome all foes; I am all-wise; I am free from stains in every way; I have left everything, and have obtained emancipation by the destruction of desire. Having myself gained knowledge, whom should I call my master? I have no teacher; no one is equal to me; in the world of men and of gods no being is like me. I am the holy one in this world; I am the highest teacher. I alone am the absolute omniscient one (*sambuddho*); I have gained coolness (by the extinction of all passion), and have obtained Nirvâṇa. To found the kingdom of the law (*dhammo*) I go to the city of the Kâsîs (Banâras); I will beat the drum of immortality<sup>1</sup> in the darkness of this world.’ He went on to boast of having reached ‘extinction of the defilements,’<sup>2</sup> and of having overcome all states of sinfulness.

In such a philosophy as this there is no room for God. It is not strange, therefore, to find that Buddha never seems to have sought for God at all. One of his disciples in our own time is, therefore, practically correct in saying<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> By ‘immortality’ (*amata*) Buddha means ‘Nirvâṇa.’ It is so called as the state in which there can be no death as there is no existence. We might, perhaps, equally well call it ‘eternal death.’

<sup>2</sup> The ‘defilements’ are those four mentioned above—viz., sensual desire (*kâmo*), earthly existence or individuality (*bhavo*), heresy (*ditṭhi*), and ignorance (*avijjâ*) of the Four Noble Truths.

<sup>3</sup> Subhadra Bhikschu, ‘Buddhistischer Katechismus’: ‘Es giebt kein Gott-Schöpfer, von dessen Gnade oder dessen Willen der Bestand der Welt abhinge. Alles entsteht und entwickelt sich durch und aus sich selbst, kraft seines *eigenen* Willens und gemäss seiner inneren Natur und Beschaffenheit (seinem *Karma*). Einen persönlichen Gott-Schöpfer hat nur die Unwissenheit der Menschen erfunden. Die Buddhisten aber verwerfen durchaus den Glauben an einen persönlichen Gott und halten die Lehre von einer Schöpfung aus Nichts für einen Irrwahn’ (p. 40).



that Buddhism teaches that there is no God,<sup>1</sup> the Creator of the world.

If it be asked in what that knowledge consisted which Buddha deemed himself to have acquired, and in what way it seemed to him efficacious in emancipating him from all 'world fetters' (*samyojanâni*), this will be best understood from a study of the language he used in the first sermon which he is stated to have preached after attaining Buddhahood. The Mahâvaggo states that, after spending four times seven<sup>2</sup> days in meditation under various trees, during which time he at first thought of ceasing to exist, and thus entering at once on the enjoyment of his emancipation from all suffering, he at length decided to remain alive in this world in order to teach to others the way of deliverance which he had evolved from his own inner consciousness or intuition.<sup>3</sup> The tradition says that he was induced to come to this reso-

<sup>1</sup> The very discussion of the question by whom the world was created was condemned as 'talking about absurd and frivolous subjects of conversation.' So we find it said in the Brahmajâla-Suttam Atthakathâ: 'Lokakkhâyikâ ti, "ayaṃ loko kena nimitto?"—"Asukena nāma nimitto." "Kāko seto atthīnaṃ settatā;" "balākaṃ rattā lohitassa rattattā," ti. Evamādikaṃ lokāyata-vitaṇḍā-sallāpa-kathā.' The contempt for any such inquiry is shown by the questions here compared with it.

<sup>2</sup> The later traditions say 'seven times seven days' (Buddhaghosa's Commentary; Beal, 'Romantic Legend,' p. 236 *et seq.*; Lalita-Vistara, p. 488 *et seq.*; Jātaka Atthav., vol. i., p. 77 *et seq.*; Dīpavamso, i. 29, 30). A later story, contained in the Mahâparinibbâna-Suttam (p. 30 *et seq.*), and Mâra-Samyuttam of the Sutta-Piṭakam (cap. i., §§ 1-3), and afterwards amplified in the Lalita-Vistara (p. 489 *et seq.*), represents the evil principle Mâro as tempting Buddha to enter Nirvâna at once, so that his doctrine might not be preached to the world. The 'Romantic History' places a long series of temptations and assaults *before* the attainment of Buddhahood (pp. 199-224).

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Mahâvaggo, i. 1: 23.

lution by the humble entreaties of Brahmā Sahampati,<sup>1</sup> the being who, in Buddhist mythology, rules over the highest of all the heavens. This archangel, as we may term him, most humbly kneeling before Buddha, said, 'Let the Tathâgato<sup>2</sup> preach the doctrine! There are beings whose mental eyes are darkened by scarcely any dust; but if they do not hear the doctrine they cannot attain emancipation. These will understand the doctrine.' We can the better understand this urgency when we remember that the *devas* are also subject to the miseries of existence, and their only hope of deliverance lay in accepting the doctrine of Buddha.

Learning that his former instructors Âlâmo Kâlâmo and Uddako Râmaputto<sup>3</sup> had died, Buddha resolved to go to teach his five former companions, who had gone to Banâras. He found them there in the deer-park Isipatano.<sup>4</sup> At first they refused to show him any respect, but at last consented to listen to his teaching. Buddha then delivered his first sermon, which is called the 'Discourse regarding the Inauguration of the Dominion of the Law.'<sup>5</sup> It sets before us an epitome of the main principles<sup>6</sup> of the philosophy which he taught. Nearly

<sup>1</sup> He is evidently identical with the Brahmâ of the Hindûs, though we do not know the exact meaning of the title 'Sahampati.'

<sup>2</sup> Mahâvaggo, i. 5.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, i. 6: 1-4.

<sup>4</sup> *Op. cit.*, § 5 *et seq.*

<sup>5</sup> Dhammacakkappavattana-Suttam. It is quoted in Mahâvaggo, i. 6: 17-29.

<sup>6</sup> Of this sermon Subhadra Bhikschu says: 'Diese Predigt enthält in kurzen Worten die Grundzüge der ganzen Lehre' ('Buddhistischer Katechismus,' sixth edition, p. 18, § 45). His interpretation, however, of the title of the discourse, which he renders 'Verkündigung der moralischen Weltordnung, oder die Gründung des Reiches der ewigen Gerechtigkeit,' is incorrect. Many other writers also, by using *Christian* technical theological terms as translations of Buddhist ones, convey to



every other recorded address deals, generally speaking, with the same subjects, amplifying and explaining them in detail. If we thoroughly grasp the meaning of the instruction contained in this discourse, we shall have a very fair idea of the leading doctrines of Buddhism in its original form. Omitting repetitions, it may be rendered as follows :

‘ These are the two extremes, O mendicants, which ought not to be practised by an anchoret.

‘ Which two ?

‘ Both this, which in lusts is devoted and attached to lust and pleasure, is low, common, worthy of a profane person, ignoble, pernicious ; and this, which is devoted to self-mortification, is painful, ignoble, pernicious. Having shunned both these extremes, O mendicants, the Tathâgato has thoroughly comprehended the Middle Course, which produces insight, which produces knowledge ; it conducts to quietude, to supernatural knowledge, to perfect Buddhahood, to Nirvâṇa.

‘ And which, O mendicants, is that Middle Course which the Tathâgato has thoroughly comprehended, which produces insight, which produces knowledge, which conducts to quietude, to supernatural knowledge, to perfect Buddhahood, to Nirvâṇa ?

‘ This is verily the Noble Eightfold Path, namely : Perfect opinion, perfect resolve, perfect speech, perfect employment, perfect conduct, perfect exertion, perfect thought, perfect self-concentration.

‘ This indeed, O mendicants, is that Middle Course<sup>1</sup>

---

the ordinary reader an altogether false idea that Buddhism has much in common with Christianity.

<sup>1</sup> With this ‘ Middle Course,’ compare what Aristotle says : “Οτι μὲν οὖν ἐστὶν ἡ ἀρετὴ ἡ ἠθικὴ μεσότης, καὶ πῶς, καὶ ὅτι μεσότης δύο κακιῶν, τῆς μὲν καθ’ ὑπερβολὴν τῆς δὲ κατ’ ἑλλειψιν, καὶ ὅτι τοιαύτη ἐστὶ διὰ τὸ





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



‘ This again, indeed, O mendicants, is the Noble Truth of Suffering : Birth is painful, decrepitude is painful, sickness is painful, death is painful, association with unloved objects is painful, separation from loved objects is painful, the desire which one does not obtain, that, too, is painful—in short, the five elements<sup>1</sup> of attachment to existence are painful.

‘ This again, indeed, O mendicants, is the Noble Truth of the Cause of Suffering : It is that thirst which leads to renewed existence, connected with joy and passion, finding joy here and there, namely : thirst for sensual pleasure, thirst for existence, thirst for non-existence.<sup>2</sup>

---

labhati taṃ pi dukkhaṃ :—sañkhittena, pañc’ upâdânakkhandhâ dukkhâ.

‘ Idam kho pana, bhikkhave, dukkhasamudayaṃ ariyasaccaṃ : yâyaṃ taṇhâ ponobbhavikâ, nandi-râga-sahagatâ, tatra tatrâbhinandinî, seyyathîdam : Kâmatanḥhâ, Bhavatanḥhâ, Vibhavanḥhâ.

‘ Idam kho pana, bhikkhave, dukkhanirodham ariyasaccaṃ, yo tassâ yeva tanhâya asesavirâga-nirodho câgo paṭinissago mutti anâlâyo.

‘ Idam kho pana, bhikkhave, dukkhanirodhagâmini paṭipadâ ariyasaccaṃ.

‘ Ayam eva ariyo aṭṭhaṅgiko maggo, seyyathîdam : sammâdiṭṭhi,’ etc.

‘ Idam dukkhaṃ ariyasaccan-ti, me, bhikkhave, pubbe ananussutesu dhammesu cakkhuṃ udapâdi, ñâṇaṃ udapâdi, paññâ udapâdi, vijjâ udapâdi, aloko udapâdi ’ (Mahâvaggo, i. 6 : 17-23).

<sup>1</sup> The ‘five elements of existence’ are Form (*rûpa*), Sensation (*vedanâ*), Perception (*saññâ*), Functions (*saṃkhârâ*), and Consciousness (*viññâṇa*). The ‘functions’ are those of Body (*kâyasamkhâro*), Speech (*vâcīsamkhâro*), and Thought (*cittasamkhâro*). Vide the Sammâdiṭṭhisuttanta of the Majjh.-Nik., quoted in ‘Sacred Books of the East,’ vol. xiii., p. 76, note. The first consists of inhalation and expiration ; the second of attention and investigation ; the third of ideas, sensations, and all attributes of mind except attention and investigation.

<sup>2</sup> Vide Childers’ Pāli Dictionary, s.v. Vibhavo, and Vījesinho’s Commentary quoted there. The latter says that ‘bhavatanḥhâ’ means a desire for an eternity of existence, while ‘vibhavanḥhâ’ means a desire

‘ This again, indeed, O mendicants, is the Noble Truth of the Cessation of Suffering, which is the cessation and total absence of desire for that very thirst, its abandonment, surrender, release from it, non-attachment to it.

‘ This again, indeed, O mendicants, is the Noble Truth of the Course which leads to the Cessation of Suffering.

‘ This is verily the Noble Eightfold Path, namely: Perfect opinion,’ etc.

‘ That “ this is the Noble Truth of Suffering,” (to understand this) in me, O mendicants, has sprung up insight into matters previously unheard of, knowledge has sprung up, wisdom has sprung up, learning has sprung up, intuition has sprung up.’

After repeating the same assertion with reference to each of the other Noble Truths, Buddha thus continued his discourse :

‘ As<sup>1</sup> long as my thus triply modified twelvefold knowledge of and acquaintance with these four Noble Truths, O mendicants, was not correctly and thoroughly clear, just so long, O mendicants, did I perceive that I had not

for annihilation in the very first form of existence. ‘ Both of these doctrines are odious to Buddhists, the first striking at the doctrine of Nirvâṇa, and the second at that of Karma.’

<sup>1</sup> ‘ Yâva kîvañca me, bhikkhave, imesu catusu ariyasaccesu evaṃ ti-parivaṭṭaṃ dvâdasâ-kâraṃ, yathâbhûtaṃ, ñâṇadasānaṃ na suvisuddhaṃ ahosi, n’eva tâvâhaṃ, bhikkave, sadevake loke, samârake, sabrahmake, sassamaṇabrâhmaṇiyâ pajâya, sadevamanussâya, anuttaraṃ sammâsambodhiṃ abhisambuddho paccaññâsiṃ.

‘ Yato ca kho me, bhikkhave, imesu catusu ariyasaccesu evaṃ ti-parivaṭṭaṃ dvâdasâ-kâraṃ, yathâbhûtaṃ, ñâṇadassanaṃ suvisuddhaṃ ahosi, athâhaṃ, bhikkhave, sadevake loke, samârake, sabrahmake, sassamaṇabrâhmaṇiyâ pajâya, sadevamanussâya, anuttaraṃ sammâsambodhiṃ abhisambuddho ti paccaññâsiṃ.

‘ Ñâṇaṇca pana me dassanaṃ udapâdi : ‘ Akuppâ me ceto-vinutti, ayaṃ antimâ jâti, n’atthi dâni punabbhavo-ti’ (Mahâvaggo, i. 6 : 27-29).

attained to perfect knowledge of the highest, perfect omniscience regarding the world of gods, regarding that of Mâro, regarding the Brahmâ-world, regarding (all) beings, including monks and Brâhmaṇs, gods and men.

‘And indeed, O mendicants, since the time that my thus triply modified, twelvefold knowledge of and acquaintance with these four Noble Truths has become correctly and thoroughly clear, I have now perceived, O mendicants, that I have attained to perfect knowledge of the highest, perfect omniscience regarding the world of gods, regarding that of Mâro, regarding the Brahmâ-world, regarding (all) beings, including monks and Brâhmaṇs, gods and men.

‘And again the knowledge and conviction has sprung up in me, that my mind’s emancipation is unchangeable; that this is my last birth, that henceforth (for me) there is no rebirth.’

The story goes on to tell how, when Buddha had by this discourse ‘inaugurated the dominion of the law,’<sup>1</sup> then the *devas* who inhabit this earth of ours, and who are the lowest in rank of all the superhuman intelligences, cried aloud, ‘Thus<sup>2</sup> in the deer-park Isipatano at Banâras hath the Worshipful One<sup>3</sup> established the highest dominion of the Law, which cannot be subverted by either monk or Brâhmaṇ or by a god or by Mâro or by Brahmâ or by anyone in the world.’

<sup>1</sup> Literally, ‘set going the wheel of the law’; but the *wheel* is the chariot-wheel of a Sovereign, and the expression means what we have indicated. *Vide* Childers’ Pāli Dictionary, s.v. Pavatteti.

<sup>2</sup> ‘Evaṃ Bhagavatâ Bârâṇasiyaṃ Isipatane Migadâye anuttaraṃ dhammacakkaṃ pavattitaṃ, appaṭivattiyaṃ samaṇena vâ, brâhmaṇena vâ, devena vâ, Mârena vâ, Brahmuna vâ, kenaci lokasmin-ti’ (Mahâvaggo, i. 6 : 30).

<sup>3</sup> ‘Bhagavâ,’ a common title of Buddha. It may also be rendered ‘Lord.’



On hearing this shout, the gods of the many heavens of the Brâhmaṇical and Buddhistic mythology re-echoed the cry to the highest heaven of heavens. 'Thus,<sup>1</sup> in that moment, in that instant, in that second, the shout reached the Brahmâ-world; and this whole system of ten thousand worlds quaked, was shaken, and trembled, and an infinite, mighty light was seen through the world, which surpassed the light that can be produced by the divine power of the *devas*.'

The immediate result of this address was the conversion of all the five mendicants. Of one of them, Koṇḍañño,<sup>2</sup> first, and of two others a little later, it is asserted that they almost instantaneously attained to a conviction of the truth of the important doctrine which the Buddhists term the 'eye<sup>3</sup> of the law,' and which is thus expressed, 'All that has an origin has also an end.'<sup>4</sup> It is on this doctrine or axiom that the Buddhist bases his hope of ultimately attaining Nirvâṇa.

All the lengthy addresses or sermons which Buddha is recorded to have delivered during the many years which elapsed between his attaining Buddhahood and his death treat of the same general dogmas which are enunciated in this first sermon. The 'Noble Eightfold Path' in which he taught men to walk had as its object the deliverance of his followers from the suffering which constituted, in his opinion, the whole of existence in each and every one of the worlds. It is true, as we have learnt from this discourse, that Buddha claimed to possess perfect knowledge of all things; but, while

<sup>1</sup> Mahâvaggo, i. 6 : 31. I have adopted here the translation given in 'Sacred Books of the East,' vol. xiii., p. 98.

<sup>2</sup> Mahâvaggo, i. 6 : 29, 32, 33.

<sup>3</sup> Dhammacakkhum.

<sup>4</sup> 'Yam kiñci samudayadhammaṃ, sabbaṃ taṃ nirodha-dhammaṃ-ti' (Mahâvaggo, i. 6 : 29).

displaying that knowledge in the matter of the details of his numerous previous births, he always brought it to bear solely on the elucidation of the doctrines briefly enunciated in the preceding discourse. In fact, so far was Buddha from encouraging inquiry into the origin of the universe, the existence and the nature of the Deity, and other such deep and all-important matters, that he directly discouraged his disciples from considering them at all, teaching them that such investigations were practically useless, and likely to distract men's attention from what he held to be the only matter of any real and vital importance—progress in the way of escape from the suffering and misery of existence. His system, therefore, does not in any way deserve the title of a religion, for that cannot be a religion in which God is left out. Buddhism is, and professes to be, a purely human philosophy, or, rather, a system of exact knowledge (*γνῶσις*), though this knowledge was in practice extremely limited in its extent. Buddha did not, indeed, deny the existence of superhuman intelligences<sup>1</sup>—the *devas* or gods of the Hindu mythology; on the contrary, the canonical Pāli books continually mention their existence, as we have seen to be the case in the passages recently quoted. But even the very highest of the gods are bound with the same chain of existence and consequent misery and suffering as are men. Their power

<sup>1</sup> 'Götter leugnet der Buddhismus nicht, legt Ihnen aber auch keine besondere Wichtigkeit bei: er bedarf ihrer einfach nicht, weder zur Stütze seiner Moral noch zur Erlangung der Erlösung. Wer an Götter glauben will, mag es thun, nur darf er nicht vergessen, dass die Götter, wie alle lebenden Wesen, vergänglich und in der Wiedergeburt unterworfen sind, wenn ihr Lehen auch nach Millionen Erdenjahren zählt, und dass der zur Erkenntniss gelangte Heilige, vor Allem aber der Buddha, weit über alle Götter erhaben ist' ('Buddh. Katechismus,' pp. 19, 20, note).

and knowledge are limited. They are all liable to death, and to be reborn in some lower condition, just as men are. For their emancipation from these and similar evils the gods need the same instruction and require to walk in the same 'Noble Eightfold Path' as do men. Buddha, in consequence of his omniscience and his having obtained deliverance from the fetters of existence, has become superior to all the gods,<sup>1</sup> and they are numbered among his admiring disciples. Even a Buddhist monk who has reached the highest grade of discipleship is greatly superior to the gods themselves. It is plain, therefore, that to call these beings by the title of gods at all is a misnomer, and is apt to lead to a misunderstanding of the attitude of Buddhism towards them.

The number of Buddha's followers gradually increased. Nobles and Brâhmaṇs, many rich men and some poor ones, came to him and were taught his law. Although Buddha (following in this, as we have already seen, the custom common among anchorit leaders) made no account of caste in itself, and did not deny to the poor and the outcast the privilege of entering the Order which he had founded, yet to understand his teaching required a certain amount of intellect. As *knowledge* formed so important a part of his teaching, it was not adapted for all, and hence it is that we find that his disciples

<sup>1</sup> This is plain, not only from the extracts given above, but also from the tales related (*e.g.*, in the Mahâvaggo, i. 16-18, 20) of the reverence paid to Buddha, and the services performed for him by the four Mahârâjas (the rulers of the lowest of the *devalokas*; their names are Dhatarattho, Virulho, Virûpakkho, and Vessavaṇo, and they are the Regents of North, South, East, and West respectively), by Sakko (Indra), Brahmâ, etc. Sakko, King of the inferior *devas*, says to the people of Rājagāham (Rājagriham, now Rājgīr): 'I am the servitor of him who is wise, entirely self-controlled, the unrivalled Buddha, the Arabat, the most fortunate one upon the earth' (Mahâvaggo, i. 22 : 14).



belonged for the most part to the wealthy and leisured classes of society. All who wished to become full members of his Order were obliged to become mendicant monks, and to observe very strict rules of conduct. But, besides these *bhikkhus* or *samanos*, he had many lay adherents (*upāsakos*), whose main duty was to provide for the wants of the mendicants.

When the mendicants (members of the Order) amounted to sixty persons—which, if we may believe tradition, took place about five months after the first preaching of the law—Buddha assembled them at Isipatano, and sent them forth to proclaim to all men the doctrines which he had taught them. The account of this incident, which has had such far-reaching results in the history of a very large part of the Eastern World, is thus given in the Sutta-Piṭakam :

‘At one time<sup>1</sup> the Worshipful One dwelleth at Banâras, in the deer-park Isipatano. There, indeed, the Worshipful One addressed the mendicants thus : “Mendicants, Venerable Ones.” Those mendicants hearkened unto the Worshipful One.

‘The Worshipful One said this: “I am freed, O mendicants, from all fetters, those which are divine

<sup>1</sup> ‘Ekam samayaṃ Bhagavâ Bârâṇasiyaṃ viharati, Isipatane migadâye. Tatra kho Bhagavâ bhikkhû âmantesi ; “Bhikkhavo,”-ti, “Bhadante,”-ti. Te bhikkhû Bhagavato paccassosum. Bhagavâ etad avoca : Mutto ’ham, bhikkhave, sabbapâsehi, ye dibbâ, ye ca mânusâ. Tumhe pi, bhikkhave, muttâ sabbapâsehi, ye dibbâ, ye ca mânusâ. Caratha, bhikkhave, cârikaṃ bahujana-hitâya, bahujana-sukhâya, lokânukam-pakâya, atthâya, hitâya, sukhâya devamanussânam. Mâ ekena dve agamettha. Desetha, bhikkhave, dhammaṃ âdikalyâṇam, majjhe kalyâṇam, pariyosâṇa-kalyâṇam. Sâttham savyañjanam kevala-paripunṇam, parisuddham brahmacariyaṃ pakâsetha. Santi sattâ aparajakkha-jâtikâ ; assavanatâ dhammassa parihâyanti : bhavissanti dhammassa aññâtâro’ (Mâra-Samyuttaṃ, iv. : I § 5 : 1, 2 ; Mahâvaggo, i. 11).





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



so as to cover one shoulder, salute the feet of the mendicants, and sit down squatting : then let him raise his joined hands, and tell him to say :

‘ “ I go to Buddha as a refuge ;  
 I go to the Law as a refuge ;  
 I go to the Order as a refuge :  
 A second time, too, I go to Buddha as a refuge ;  
 A second time, too, I go to the Law as a refuge ;  
 A second time, too, I go to the Order as a refuge :  
 A third time, too, I go to Buddha as a refuge ;  
 A third time, too, I go to the Law as a refuge ;  
 A third time, too, I go to the Order as a refuge.” ’<sup>1</sup>

In accordance with his declared intention, Buddha set out for Uruvelâ. Although the account which the Mahâvaggo gives of certain previous circumstances cannot be said to be free from the fabulous, yet the story of what he did on this journey is so utterly absurd that it cannot be said to possess much historical value. But we quote some of the details here in order to show how even the comparatively sober Pāli books have coloured the incidents of a simple preaching expedition.

On the journey Buddha met with a party of thirty rich and dissipated young men. After an address from him they became his disciples.<sup>2</sup> When he reached the

<sup>1</sup> This formula is called the Saraṇagamanam, and in the original runs thus :

‘ Buddham saraṇam gacchâmi,  
 Dhammam saraṇam gacchâmi,  
 Saṅgham saraṇam gacchâmi.  
 Dutiyam pi Buddham saraṇam gacchâmi,  
 Dutiyam pi Dhammam saraṇam gacchâmi,  
 Dutiyam pi Saṅgham saraṇam gacchâmi.  
 Tatiyam pi Buddham saraṇam gacchâmi,  
 Tatiyam pi Dhammam saraṇam gacchâmi,  
 Tatiyam pi Saṅgham saraṇam gacchâmi.’

<sup>2</sup> Mahâvaggo, i. 14.

neighbourhood of Uruvelâ, he there found a community of one thousand *Jaṭilas*<sup>1</sup> (ascetics with matted hair),

<sup>1</sup> They recognised the authority of the Vedas (Mahâvaggo, vi. 35 : 2), lived in the woods (Jâtaka Atthavaṇṇanā ; *cf.* similar forest-dwellers in the Mahâbhârata), and offered the Agnihotra sacrifice (Mahâvaggo, i. 20 : 19). Among the marvels performed by Buddha on this occasion may be mentioned the following : Obtaining permission to spend the night in the room where the Jaṭilas kept their sacred fire burning, Buddha there found 'a savage Serpent-(*nāga*-)king of great magical power (*iddhi*), a dreadfully venomous serpent.' This creature, unable to restrain his wrath at the intrusion, 'sent forth fire. And the Worshipful One, turning his own body into fire, sent forth flames. When they both shone forth with their flames, the fire-room looked as if it were burning and blazing, as if it were all in flames.' Thus conquering the serpent, Buddha, the next morning, without injuring him, threw him into his alms-bowl, and exhibited him to Uruvelâ Kassapo. On that occasion 'dark blue and red, light red, yellow, and crystal-coloured flames of various hues appeared on the Aṅgirasô's [= Buddha's] body' (Mahâvaggo, i. 15). 'One beautiful night the four Mahârâjas, filling the whole grove with light by the brilliancy of their complexion, went to the place where the Worshipful One was. Having approached him, and respectfully saluted the Worshipful One, they stood towards the four cardinal points like great firebrands.' The same story is told of the conduct of Sakko (Indra) and of Brahmâ Sahampati. Once more, when Buddha wished to wash some rags to make himself a robe, Sakko dug a tank for him to wash them in, provided stones for him to beat them on (after the manner common among Indian washermen) and to dry them on, and a tree bent down one of its branches to help Buddha when he wished to come up out of the water. Buddha then in a single moment of time paid a visit to the *jambū* (rose-apple) tree which grows in the Himâlaya forest (on this tree, *vide* Hardy, 'Manual of Buddhism,' p. 18 *et seq.*). On another night Buddha repeated his visit to this tree, and then proceeded to the Heaven of the Thirty-three gods (Tāvātimsa) to pluck a flower. Another day 500 pieces of firewood, which the Jaṭilas could not split, at Buddha's command split of themselves. He also lit and extinguished their fires when the Jaṭilas could not do so. He created 500 vessels, with fire burning in them, for the Jaṭilas to warm themselves at on a winter night after they had bathed. During an inundation, Buddha caused the water in one place to recede, and then he 'walked about in the midst of the water on a dust-covered



presided over by three chiefs, each of whom bore the name Kassapo. The Mahâvaggo relates the most puerile tales of the wonderful exercise of magical power by which Buddha ultimately succeeded in converting all of these Jāṭilas, and in bringing them to do homage to himself. Not long afterwards he received a visit from Seniyo Bimbisâro, King of Magadha, who was accompanied by no less than 120,000 Brâhmaṇs and householders. In consequence of the address which Buddha delivered to them, 110,000 of these became full members of his Order, and the remaining 10,000 became lay adherents.<sup>1</sup> Bimbisâro then made Buddha a present of the Veḷuvanaṃ ('bamboo-grove,' one of the royal pleasure-grounds<sup>2</sup> near his capital Rājagāhaṃ), as a place where he and his followers might sojourn when they visited that part of Magadha. It was in the same city of Rājagāhaṃ that two young Brâhmaṇs, Sâriputto (otherwise called Upatisso) and Moggallâno (whose other name was Kolito), entered the Order, of which they afterwards became two of the most distinguished<sup>3</sup> members. Assaji was the means of their conversion, and the latter, in explaining the main principles of Buddha's doctrine at Sâriputto's request, quoted the following text, afterwards adopted as the creed or confession of faith of the Buddhists, and found inscribed in various alphabets on ancient monuments in many parts of India :

spot.' He then compelled the Jāṭilo Uruvelâ Kassapo to acknowledge that he had not obtained *arahat*ship and to seek admission into the Order. He was followed in this by all the Jāṭilas, who were convinced and converted by the recital of the 3,500 miracles which Buddha had performed in their midst (Mahâvaggo, i. 15-20).

<sup>1</sup> Mahâvaggo, i. 22 : 3.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, i. 22 : 17, 18.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, i. 23.

‘ Whatsoever conditions are sprung from a cause,  
The cause of them the Tathâgato  
Has told, and what is their end :  
Thus spoke the Great Monk.’<sup>1</sup>

This refers to Buddha’s teaching in reference to the origin of suffering and the way to escape from it. We shall deal with this more fully in the second lecture.

These two young disciples then betook themselves to the place where Buddha was. Taking with them 250 of their own followers, they prostrated themselves before him, and sought at his hands admission to the Order. Their example is said to have been followed by so many distinguished young Magadhan noblemen that the people of the country murmured at the spread of the new doctrines, as likely to lead ultimately to a decrease in the population.

After leaving Râjagâham, Buddha next proceeded to his native city of Kapilavastu, where he took up his residence in the place known as the Banyan Grove (Nigrodhârâmo), not far from the city where his father still lived. The Mahâvaggo gives a very plain and simple account of the interview which soon after took place between Buddha and the members of the family from which he had now been separated for more than seven years. The story is a very different one from the highly-coloured narrative which is found in later Buddhist writings, and from the highly poetical and touching description given by an English poet of our own time in

<sup>1</sup> ‘ Ye dhammâ hetuppabhavâ,  
Tesaṃ hetum Tathâgato  
Âha, tesañca yo nirodho :  
Evaṃ vadi Mahâ Samaṇo.’

Mahâvaggo, i. 23, 5 and 10.

The *dhammâ*, or ‘conditions,’ are the five *khandhos* or the twelve *nidânas* (*vide* Mahâvaggo, i. 1 : 2).



that delightful but utterly romantic and unhistorical work, 'The Light of Asia.'<sup>1</sup> The tale runs thus :

' In the forenoon the Worshipful One, having put on his under-robcs, took his alms-bowl, and, clad in his yellow robe (*cîvaram*), went to the dwelling-place of Sakko Suddhodano. Having gone thither, he sat down on a seat which had been prepared for him. Then the Princess, Râhulo's mother, said to young Râhulo, " This is thy father, O Râhulo ; go and ask him for thine heritage." Then young Râhulo approached the place where the Worshipful One was. Having approached, he stood before the Worshipful One and spoke thus : " Thy shadow, O monk, is a place of bliss." Then the Worshipful One, having risen from his seat, withdrew ; and young Râhulo, following the Worshipful One from behind, said : " O monk, give me my heritage." ' By Buddha's direction, Sâriputto then admitted Râhulo to the first grade of the monkish community.

But when news of this event reached Buddha's father, he was much grieved, and went to remonstrate with his son on what he had done. ' Then Sakko Suddhodano approached the place where the Worshipful One was. Having approached, and having respectfully saluted the

<sup>1</sup> Sir Edwin Arnold's work is, and professes to be, nothing but a poetical romance, founded for the most part upon the late Sanskrit romance entitled ' Mahâbhinishkramaṇa-Sûtra ' ( ' The Chapter of the Great Renunciation ' ), which is by neither of the great divisions of the Buddhist world accepted as a canonical work. Certain stories (like that of Kisâ Gotamî, taken from the Commentary on the Dhammapadam) have been incorporated from other sources. It is strange, therefore, to find ' The Light of Asia ' quoted as an authoritative work upon Buddhism, and to learn from the publishers' preface that some ' English Buddhists ' have taken it as their religious manual. Does not this illustrate the Horatian maxim, ' Dulce est desipere in loco ' ? Regarding sciolists of this class one is inclined to say : ' Populus vult decipi : decipiatur. '

Worshipful One, he sat down near him. Sitting near him, Sakko Suddhodano said to the Worshipful One: "Sir, I ask a boon of the Worshipful One." Buddha's reply was a refusal to grant a boon without being previously informed for what he was about to be asked. 'Then Suddhodano said: "Sir, when the Worshipful One gave up the world, it was great pain to me: so it was when Nando<sup>1</sup> did so: my pain was extreme when Râhulo, too, did so. Love for a son, sir, cuts into the skin; having cut into the skin, it cuts into the inner cuticle; having cut into the inner cuticle, it cuts into the flesh; having cut into the flesh, it cuts into the ligaments; having cut into the ligaments, it cuts into the bones; having cut into the bones, it reaches the marrow, and in the marrow doth it abide. Please, sir, let not the venerable ones confer the *pabbajjâ* ordination on a son without the permission of his father and mother.'" <sup>2</sup> In consequence of this request, Buddha for the future forbade the practice complained of.

After that, going to the city of Śrāvastî (Pāli *Sāvatthi*),<sup>3</sup> the capital of the kingdom of Kosala, Buddha there laid down as rules to be observed by his disciples the 'Ten Moral Precepts.'<sup>4</sup> The consideration of these we must defer until the third of these lectures. Other precepts and prohibitions followed from time to time as occasion required, until at last that system of rules and the ceremonies attached to them which we find in the *Pāṭimokkham* was formed. In this system, as in all man-

<sup>1</sup> One of Buddha's half-brothers who had joined his Order.

<sup>2</sup> Mahāvaggo, i. 44 : 1-5.

<sup>3</sup> General Cunningham identifies it with Sâbet Mâhet, some fifty-eight miles north of the city of Ayodhyâ. But this is probably incorrect. Its site has not been positively identified, but it will probably be found in the lower Nepal valley, north of the Gôndâ district.

<sup>4</sup> Sikkhâpadâni (*vide* Mahāvaggo, i. 56).



made religions and philosophies, one is compelled to observe that the great error has been committed of representing as exceedingly evil certain things which are either quite allowable or perhaps only slightly unsuitable, while some of the grossest moral offences<sup>1</sup> are passed over with but slight censure or with none at all.

The Mahâvaggo very candidly mentions not a few instances<sup>2</sup> in which the prospect of 'living a life of ease and without pain' led men to become followers of Buddha, solely in order that they might share in the worldly benefits showered upon him and his disciples by the pious and wealthy lay adherents, whose duty it was to support the mendicants in that idleness which Buddhism so directly encourages. It is to be noted, however, that, when these things were reported to Buddha, he at once took steps to prevent<sup>3</sup> as much as possible for the future the entrance of such unworthy disciples into his Order.

From the time of his visit to Kapilavastu until a very short period before Buddha's death, the Pâli records afford us no means of giving anything like a consecutive account<sup>4</sup> of his life. It seems to have been uneventful, being mostly spent in wandering about the kingdoms of Kosala and Magadha, or, as they are now called, Oudh (Ayodhyâ) and Bihâr. His headquarters were at the capitals of these two States, named respectively Sâvatthi (Śrâvastî) and Râjagâham (Râjagṛham). The munificence of royal and wealthy private adherents had provided the mendicants with parks in the neighbourhood of

<sup>1</sup> Mahâvaggo, i., 62 : 1 ; *cf.* 49 : 1, 2.

<sup>2</sup> *E.g.*, Mahâvaggo, i. 30 ; *cf.* 44-47.

<sup>3</sup> See the last paragraphs in the chapters last quoted.

<sup>4</sup> Oldenberg, 'Buddha,' English translation, p. 141 *et seq.* ; Copleston, 'Buddhism,' p. 59 *et seq.* ; Mahâvaggo, ii.-vi., etc.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



night Prince Ajâtasattu, Bimbisâro's son, accompanied by a large retinue, came to see him. On that occasion Buddha was reposing in a park which belonged to the famous physician Jîvako,<sup>1</sup> a lay adherent, whose marvellous cures are mentioned in the Mahâvaggo.<sup>2</sup> On another occasion Buddha received a visit from the wealthy young Licchavi<sup>3</sup> nobles, when he resided near the city of Vesâlî. There, too, the courtesan Ambapâlî<sup>4</sup> invited Buddha and his monks to lunch in a mangrove which belonged to her, and which she afterwards presented to the Order. In the Pâli books we frequently read of such invitations to luncheon being accepted by Buddha. When no such provision was made for the supply of his daily wants, Buddha went forth in the morning, clad in his yellow robe and carrying his alms-bowl, thus silently begging food as he passed from door to door through the streets. Opponents as well as inquirers frequently sought his presence. On these occasions he is generally represented as victorious in the dispute, and he often succeeded in silencing his interlocutors, if not in converting them. When anyone came to seek admission to his Order, Buddha's address to the postulant was always, we are told, couched in the following words: 'Come hither, O mendicant: well preached is the doctrine; walk correctly to make an end of all suffering.'<sup>5</sup>

The Order (*Saṅgho*) which Buddha founded at first consisted merely of mendicant *monks*, whose shaven heads and yellow robes marked them off from the outer world.

<sup>1</sup> Mahâvaggo, viii. 1 *et seq.*; Oldenberg, 'Buddha,' p. 147.

<sup>2</sup> Mahâvaggo, viii.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Mahâparinibbâna-Suttam, p. 19.

<sup>4</sup> Mahâparinibbâna-Suttam, pp. 20, 21.

<sup>5</sup> 'Ehi, bhikkhu,' etc.

Only somewhat later, at the urgent entreaty of Buddha's foster-mother,<sup>1</sup> Mahâpajâpatî, were *women* admitted to membership in the Order. The term 'mendicant' (Pāli *bhikkhu* m., *bhikkhunî* f.) is that by which the disciples, of whichever sex, are usually spoken of. Lay adherents, male and female (Pāli *upāsako* m., *upāsikâ* f.), had the privilege of waiting on the monks, and supplying the wants of the latter out of their own substance. But gratitude for this was due, not to the pious lay-people, but to the mendicants, who thus afforded them an opportunity of obtaining merit. These lay adherents, however, formed no part<sup>2</sup> of the Buddhist Order or community proper. The monks who composed the latter were, even in Buddha's lifetime, bound in almost every detail of their daily life by most rigorous rules, and in particular by those of chastity and poverty. Every fortnight<sup>3</sup> public confession was enjoined according to a set form of question and answer (the *Pâtimokkham*). Although no man was excluded from membership because of his low<sup>4</sup> caste, yet very few converts are

<sup>1</sup> Cullavaggo, i. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Oldenberg, pp. 162, 163.

<sup>3</sup> *Uposatho pañnaraso*, the fifteenth day of the half-month: *Pâtimokkham*, *Nidānam* (=Introduction); *Mahāvaggo*, ii. 3 and 34. But the *Mahāvaggo* states that it was in imitation of the *Paribbâjikos* of the *Titthiyo* school that Buddha instituted this ceremony, and that he did so at the suggestion of King *Bimbisâro*, who recommended this because he saw that the people admired those anchorets on that account (*Mahāvaggo*, ii. 1: 1-3; 2: 3).

<sup>4</sup> Oldenberg (p. 152) quotes the following passage: 'As the great streams, O mendicants, however many they be—the Ganges, the Yamunâ, the Aciravatî, the Sarabhû, the Mahî—when they reach the great ocean, lose their old name and their old descent, and bear only one name, "the great ocean," so also, O mendicants, these four castes—Kshatriyas, Brâhmanas, Vaiśyas, and Śûdras—when they, according to the law and doctrine which the Tathâgato has preached, forsake



mentioned who did not belong to the noble and wealthy portion of society. Most of his first disciples seem to have been Brâhmaṇs or Kshattriyas, and it is very doubtful if an outcast would have been admitted under any circumstances. In not distinctly excluding members of the lower castes from membership in his Order, however, Buddha was, it must never be forgotten, merely following the custom<sup>1</sup> of earlier and contemporary monkish communities. At the same time there was a great difference in this matter between Buddhist theory and Buddhist practice. Professor Oldenberg remarks on this subject:<sup>2</sup> ‘I am not aware of any instance in which a *Caṇḍālo*—the pariah of that age—is mentioned in the sacred writings as a member of the Order. For the lower order of the people, for those born to toil in manual labour, hardened by the struggle for existence, the announcement of the connexion of misery with all forms of existence was not made, nor was the dialectic of the law of the painful concatenation of causes and effects calculated to satisfy the “poor in spirit.” “To the wise belongeth this law,” it is said, “not to the foolish.” Very unlike the word of that Man who suffered “little children” to come unto Him, “for of such is the kingdom of God.” For children and those who are like children the arms of Buddha are not opened.’ And, again, ‘Princes<sup>3</sup> and nobles, Brâhmaṇs and merchants, we find among those who “took their refuge in Buddha, the Law and the Order”—*i.e.*, who made their pro-

---

their home and go into homelessness, lose their old name and their old paternity, and bear only the one appellation, “Ascetics who follow the son of the Śākya house” (Cullavaggo, ix. 1 : 4). See the whole attitude of Buddha towards caste, fully discussed in Copleston’s ‘Buddhism,’ cap. xvii., pp. 227-240.

<sup>1</sup> Oldenberg, pp. 63 and 154.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. 156-158.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 163.

fession as lay believers ; the wealthy and the aristocrat, it seems, here also exceeded the poor. To reach the humble and wretched, the sorrowing, who endured yet another sorrow than the great, 'universal sorrow of impermanence, was not the province of Buddhism.'

In this respect again we see how distinctly Buddhism shows itself to be, not a religion, but a philosophy. Like all philosophies of Europe and Asia, of ancient and modern times alike, Buddhism addressed itself to the chosen few, to the cultured and the wealthy. It had no message for the poor, the outcast, the sick, the oppressed, the guilty but penitent transgressor. Not 'to the poor,' but to the rich, was proclaimed the Law of the Middle Course, the Noble Eightfold Path. Certain entire classes of the population were for various reasons refused leave<sup>1</sup> to enter the Order. Buddhism was no better adapted to universal acceptance than were the—in some respects—similar philosophies of the Epicureans

<sup>1</sup> Mahāvaggo, i. 39 : 1 and 7 (those suffering from any one of five diseases), cap. 40 (soldiers), cap. 44 (people who have been scourged), cap. 45 (branded), cap. 46 (debtors), cap. 47 (slaves), etc. *Vide* also S. Bhikshu's 'Budd. Katechismus,' p. 79, §§ 162, 163 : 'Wer ist zum Eintritt in die Brüderschaft berechtigt?—Jedermann ohne Ansehen der Rasse oder Farbe, des Ranges, Standes, und Geschlechtes, der frei von den in der Satzung angeführten Aufnahmehindernissen ist.—Wen schliesst die Satzung von der Aufnahme aus?—Alle mit ansteckenden oder unheilbaren Krankheiten Behaftete ; Kinder unter 15 Jahren, Sklaven und Leibeigene, so lange sie nicht ihre Freiheit auf rechtliche Weise erlangt haben ; alle von den Behörden Verfolgte, so lange sie nicht ausser Anklage gesetzt sind oder ihre Strafe verbüsst haben ; Schuldner, so lange sie nicht ihre Verpflichtungen erfüllt haben ; Soldaten und Beamte jeder Art, so lang sie im Dienste sind, und Unmündige, welche die Erleubnis ihrer Eltern oder Vormünder nicht besitzen.' But we must remember that what was refused was admission to an Order of monks, and the object of the exclusion of such classes of persons was to prevent complaint that people had entered the Order for the sake of obtaining some mundane advantage.



and the Stoics, for ideas afterwards the property in some cases of the one,<sup>1</sup> in other instances that of the other school, are to be found in the earliest Buddhist writings. We are not surprised to find Kings like Pasenadi (*Prasenajit*) and Bimbisâro among Buddha's lay adherents, any more than to discover an Emperor Aurelius Antoninus among the professors of the philosophy of the Porch. And, if we find among the adherents of Zeno's school a slave like Epictetus, or among Buddha's disciples a man of humble position like the one solitary Thero<sup>2</sup> Sunîto, the exception merely proves the truth of the rule.

Buddha had, no doubt, a considerable amount of opposition to encounter, but it arose rather from the grief naturally felt by parents and relations at seeing their children and connexions renounce the world to become monks than from anything else. His teaching

<sup>1</sup> Buddha's attitude towards the mass of men—all that cannot become mendicants—is, in spite of some noble-sounding expressions of universal benevolence in the Three *Piṭakas*, very much that of the Epicurean Lucretius :

' Suave, mari magno turbantibus æquora ventis,  
E terra magnum alterius spectare laborem ;  
Non quia vexari quemquam'st iucunda voluptas,  
Sed, quibus ipse malis careas, quia cernere suave est.  
Suave etiam belli certamina magna tueri  
Per campos instructa—tua sine parte pericli.  
Sed nil dulcius est, bene quam munita tenere  
Edita doctrina sapientum templa serena,  
Despicere unde queas alios, passimque videre  
Errare atque viam palantis quærere vitæ,  
Certare ingenio, contendere nobilitate,  
Noctes atque dies niti præstante labore  
Ad summas emergere opes rerumque potiri.'

Lib. ii., verses 1-13.

<sup>2</sup> *Vide* Oldenberg, p. 157, note ; extract from the Theragâthâ.

in this respect, however, was no new thing, but was in accordance with what had for a long time previously been held and taught in India as necessary for deliverance from carnal bondage. It differed, in fact, from the teaching of the Jainas and other similar sects principally in condemning the extreme asceticism and self-torture which the members of such sects then inflicted, and still in India continue to inflict, on themselves.

Instead of being opposed to and by the Brâhmaṇs, as is generally supposed, Buddha reckoned large numbers of them among his disciples, and actually used the word Brâhmaṇ<sup>1</sup> not unfrequently to denote the very highest grade among those who walked in the Noble Eightfold Path. At other times also he uses the word in a good sense, and explains who are worthy of the appellation. For example, he says :

‘ Not through matted locks, not through descent,  
Not through birth, does one become a Brâhmaṇ :  
He in whom there is both truth and the Law,  
He is happy, and he is a Brâhmaṇ.’<sup>2</sup>

Such teaching would, of course, displease the unworthy members of that caste, but it would win the support of all the respectable Brâhmaṇs and of all the rest of the community. It was, moreover, neither new nor strange. Besides this, it must be remembered that the influence of the Brâhmaṇs in that limited part of India in which Buddha passed his life was by no means

<sup>1</sup> *Vide*, e.g., the whole of the last (the twenty-sixth) chapter of the Dhammapadam, entitled ‘ Brâhmanavaggo.’

<sup>2</sup> ‘ Na jaṭāhi, na gottena,  
Na jaccā hoti Brâhmaṇo :  
Yamhi saccañ-ca dhammo-ca,  
So sukhî, so-ca Brâhmaṇo.’

Brâhmaṇavaggo, śl. 393.



so great as in those districts in which the population was much more purely Âryan. He doubtless found the rivalry of other monkish and ascetic bodies a more serious hindrance; but on the whole he had no very great obstacles to encounter, no persecution to fear, no danger to shun. His method of teaching by delivering long discourses on the one subject with which his philosophy busied itself, the way to obtain deliverance from suffering, was similar to that still common in the East; and his extensive use of allegory and parable seems to everyone who has lived long in Oriental lands to be the most natural thing in the world. In his custom of leading men to right knowledge by dexterous questioning, Buddha resembled Socrates, but the latter developed that most excellent method of instruction to an incomparably superior degree.

About nineteen years<sup>1</sup> after attaining Buddhahood, Budda was joined by a large number of young nobles of his own clan. One of these, Ânando, was one of Buddha's cousins, and became his most devoted friend and disciple to the end of the great teacher's life. Devadatto, one of Ânando's brothers, was another of those who then attached themselves to the Order. He afterwards aimed at becoming Buddha's successor,<sup>2</sup> and endeavoured to attain to the longed-for pre-eminence by ousting Buddha himself from the headship of the Order. Devadatto hoped to gain the support of the more zealous of the monks by urging that the rules of self-denial which had been imposed upon them should be made much more rigorous. He demanded that five fresh and very strict rules should be made regarding the conduct of the

<sup>1</sup> The Therigâthâ says twenty-five years before Buddha's death, which is the same thing.

<sup>2</sup> Cullavaggo, vii.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



rightly understood, show his attitude towards the deities worshipped in different parts of India. Though deeming himself far superior to all the gods, Buddha none the less acknowledged their existence. He therefore said :<sup>1</sup>

‘ In whatever spot the learned man fixes his abode,  
There, having fed the virtuous, self-restrained, religious men,  
Whatsoever deities there may be there, to them let him present a  
gift.  
They, having been revered, reverence him ; being honoured,  
they honour him.  
Thus they pity him as a mother her own son.  
A man pitied by the deities always sees good things.’

It is evident that Buddha is here speaking of the way in which people, *other than members of his own Order*,<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> ‘ Yasmim padese kappeti vâsam paṇḍitajâtiko,  
Sîlavant’ ettha bhojetvâ saññate brahmacârayo,  
Yâ tattha devatâ assu, tâsam dakkhiṇaṃ âdise :  
Tâ pûjitâ pûjayanti, mânitâ mânayanti naṃ.  
Tato naṃ anukampanti mâtâ puttam va orasam :  
Devatânu-kampito poso sadâ bhadraṇi passatîti.’

Mahâparinibbâna-Suttaṃ, p. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Bishop Copleston does not seem to have observed this, for he speaks of these verses as ‘inconsistent with the strictest Buddhism’ (‘Buddhism,’ p. 70). The view which I have here advocated is supported by the somewhat similar stanzas in the ‘Ratana-Suttaṃ’ (‘Parittam’). There we find a great deal in praise of the Law and the Order, and at the same time such verses as these :

‘ Yâṇidha bhûtâni samâgatâni,  
Bhummâni vâ, yâni vâ antalikkhe,  
Sabb’ eva bhûtâ sumanâ bhavantu,  
Atbo pi sakkacca suṇantu bhâsitam.

‘ Tasmâ hi, bhûtâ, nisâmetha sabbe ;  
Mettam karotha mânusiya pajâya,  
Divâ-ca ratto-ca haranti ye baliṃ :  
Tasmâ hi ne rakkhattha appamattâ.

should act. We are told that he perceived that many *devas* inhabited the spot where the people of Magadha were fortifying Pâṭaligâmo, and he approved of the conduct of these people in both worshipping the gods, to gain their favour and protection, and in showing him respect and providing food for himself and his followers. We never find Buddha commanding his own mendicant Order to feed other ascetics. That they could not do, as they were themselves dependent upon the alms of the pious. Nor does he ever enjoin upon his followers the duty of worshipping the *devas*, from whom they could hope for no aid, and who were inferior to the Buddhist *arahats*.

While spending the rainy season in retirement at Beluva, near Vesâlî, Buddha became dangerously ill.<sup>1</sup> On that occasion his faithful attendant Ânando urged him to give some parting directions to his followers, to be by them observed after his death. Buddha rebuked

‘Yânîdha bhûtâni samâgatâni,  
Bhummâni vâ, yâni vâ antalikkhe,  
Tathâgatam deva-manussa-pûjitam  
Buddham namassâma : suvatthi hotu.’

Ratana-Suttam, I, 2, 15.

Here we see that though ‘all the spirits which are here assembled, whether terrestrial or those which are in the air,’ are invoked, and are urged to ‘show benevolence towards human beings who bring you an offering both day and night: therefore preserve them carefully’; yet it is said: ‘We revere Buddha, the Tathâgato, who is *honoured by gods and men*.’ Such invocations, however, no doubt made it easy for Buddhists to fall into demon-worship, as they have done in Ceylon, and helped to encourage the development of later forms of Buddhism with hosts of deities of various kinds, as in Tibet.

<sup>1</sup> ‘Atha kho Bhagavato vassûpagatassa kharo âbâdho uppajji, Pabâḥhâ vedanâ vattanti mâranantikâ’ (Mahâparinibb.-Sutt., p. 21).



him for this in an instructive discourse, part of which we here translate :

‘ Moreover,<sup>1</sup> Ânando, what does the Order of Mendicants look for from me? The Law, Ânando, has been set forth by me, having made nothing esoteric<sup>2</sup> and nothing exoteric. There is not therein, in the affairs of the Tathâgato, a “teacher’s handful.”<sup>3</sup> He whose words, Ânando, may be such as these, “I shall keep on foot the Order of Mendicants,” or, “To *my* ordinance is the Order of Mendicants subject”—let him,<sup>4</sup> forsooth, Ânando, utter some command with regard to the Order of Mendicants. The word of the Tathâgato, indeed, is not thus: “I shall keep on foot the Order of Mendicants,” or, “To *my* ordinance is the Order of Mendicants subject.” Why should the Tathâgato, Ânando, utter some command for the Order of Mendicants? Moreover, Ânando, indeed

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. 22, 23.

<sup>2</sup> Hence we see the absurdity of the modern fraud calling itself ‘Esoteric Buddhism.’ There *was* in ancient times an ‘Esoteric Buddhism,’ but its nature was such that it cannot be fully described in these pages. See, however, what Rājendralāla Mitra says of it in his introduction to the *Lalita-Vistara* (Fasc. vi., Calcutta, 1877), part of which will be found quoted in the notes to *Lecture III.*, p. 157, below. This vile system cannot justly be attributed to Buddha, but those who now so learnedly discuss ‘Esoteric Buddhism’ should be careful lest their hearers should inquire more closely into what alone can rightly be so called. The modern theosophical system which claims the title is essentially *modern*. Our objections to the use of this title are only two, very similar to those which are known to apply to the phrase ‘*Holy Roman Empire*.’

<sup>3</sup> ‘Na tatth’, Ânanda, Tathâgatassa dhammesu âcariya - muṭṭhi’ (*ibid.*). A ‘teacher’s handful’ is some further knowledge kept back by the teacher that he may remain at least a little in advance of his pupils.

<sup>4</sup> This passage doubtless refers to the words of Devadatto when he demanded that the leadership of the Order should be made over to him: ‘Ahaṃ bhikkhusaṅghaṃ pariharissāmi, niyyâdetha me bhikkhusaṅghaṃ’ (quoted by Childers, *Pāli Dictionary*, p. 341).

I am now decrepit, old, aged, advanced in years. I have reached old age; my age is eighty years. Just as a broken-down waggon, too, Ânando, is with difficulty kept going, exactly so indeed, Ânando, is the Tathâgato's body with difficulty kept going, I consider. At whatever time, Ânando, the Tathâgato dwells, having, through ceasing to pay attention to all attributes,<sup>1</sup> through the cessation of certain sensations, attained to unconditioned concentration of mind, at that time is the Tathâgato's body comfortable. Therefore, since this is so, Ânando, being your own Lamp, abide ye as your own Refuge, recognising no other Refuge, having the Law as your Lamp, having the Law as your Refuge, recognising no other Refuge. And how, Ânando, does a mendicant abide as his own Lamp, his own Refuge, recognising no other Refuge, having the Law as his Lamp, having the Law as his Refuge, having no other Refuge? Here in the body, Ânando, a mendicant, meditating on (the impurity of) the body, abides strenuous, conscious, thoughtful: let him subdue the melancholy of longing in the world. Thus indeed, Ânando, a mendicant abides as his own Lamp, his own Refuge, recognising no other Refuge, having the Law as his Lamp, having the Law as his Refuge, recognising no other Refuge. For, Ânando, whosoever they be that, either now or on my decease, shall abide as their own Lamp, as their own Refuge, recognising no other Refuge, having the Law as their Lamp, having the Law as their Refuge, recognising no other Refuge—those mendicants, Ânando, shall to me stand in the foremost place, whosoever they be that are lovers of the Precepts.'

Who can fail to notice here how completely Buddha,

<sup>1</sup> That is to say, to greed, anger, and infatuation (*rago, doso, moho*), the three things that cause suffering in the world (*Samyutta-Nik.*, iii. 3: 3, 4).



quietly but firmly, repudiates the idea that any deity or deities can assist his followers in working out their deliverance from the fetters of existence?

Having recovered from this attack of illness, Buddha one day went his rounds at Vesâlî<sup>1</sup> to beg, according to his usual custom. Afterwards he said to Ânando, ‘Ânando,<sup>2</sup> take the mat to sit on; we shall go to pass the heat of the day at the Câpâlam shrine.’ They did so. There Mâro, the god of death and of all that causes death, approaching Buddha, tempted<sup>3</sup> him to hasten his departure from this world, and from existence. Buddha’s own account of this incident, supposed to be given on the same day to his attendant, runs thus:

‘Just<sup>4</sup> now, indeed, Ânando, at the Câpâlam shrine to-day, wicked Mâro approached the place where I was, and, having approached, stood to one side. Standing to one side, indeed, Ânando, wicked Mâro said this to me: “Sir, let the Worshipful One now become extinct (or enter Nirvâṇa), let the Prosperous<sup>5</sup> One become extinct. Sir, it is now time for the Worshipful One’s complete extinction. Moreover, indeed, the Worshipful One did utter this speech, saying, ‘I shall not become extinct, Wicked One, until the mendicants, my disciples, shall have become wise, well-trained, experienced, thoroughly instructed, keepers of the Law, observers of the Law and of the lesser directions, conforming to propriety, walking according to the lesser directions, having acquired as their own the position of teachers, until they shall have declared, proclaimed, promulgated, set going, detailed, made clear the miraculous law, quoted without con-

<sup>1</sup> Mahâparinibbâna-Suttam, p. 23.

<sup>2</sup> ‘Gaṇhâhi, Ânanda, nisîdanam; yena Câpâlam cetiyam, ten’ upasaṅkamissâma divâvihârâyâ-ti’ (*ibid.*).

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. 24-26.

<sup>4</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. 31, 32.

<sup>5</sup> *Sugato.*

troversy and correctly, and, holding fast and well what they hold fast, shall have preached it.' Moreover, now indeed, sir, the mendicants, the disciples of the Worshipful One, having become wise, well-trained, etc., are preaching the Law." ' Mâro went on to point out that not only the male and female mendicants, but also the male and female lay adherents, were fully competent to do without Buddha's further assistance, and again urged him to keep his implied promise of becoming extinct. Buddha tells us that he said in reply to this temptation :

' Be not<sup>1</sup> anxious, Wicked One ; soon will the Tathâgato's extinction take place. After the lapse of three months from the present time, the Tathâgato will become extinct.' And, in concluding his recital, Buddha said, ' Just now, indeed, Ânando, at the Câpâlam shrine to-day has the Tathâgato, while thoughtful and conscious, renounced the aggregate<sup>2</sup> of his life.'

On hearing this sad news, Ânando began to entreat his beloved master to prolong his existence in this world to the end of the present vast world-cycle (Pâli *kappo*, Sanskrit *kalpa*). ' Sir,' he said, ' let the Worshipful One remain for a World-cycle, let the Prosperous One remain for a World-cycle, for the sake of many people, for many people's happiness, out of pity for the world, for the cause, for the sake, for the happiness, of gods and men.'<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Mahâparinibbâna-Suttam, p. 32.

<sup>2</sup> ' Idân' eva kho, Ânanda, ajja Câpâle cetiye Tathâgatena satena sampajânena âyusañkhâro ossattho-ti' (*ibid.*). The 'aggregate of life' means the whole period that anyone has to live in any existence. Its length is determined by his conduct (*karma*) in that or any previous existence—' dasakusalakammehi âyusañkhâro pi 'ssa vadḍhati' (Attanagula-naḥsam, p. 212 ; Childers, s.v. Sañkhâro, Pâli Dictionary, p. 455). Buddha means to say that he has resolved to die.

<sup>3</sup> ' Tiṭṭhatu, Bhante, Bhagavâ kappam, tiṭṭhatu Sugato kappam, bahujanahitâya, bahujanasukhâya, lokânukampâya, atthâya, hitâya, sukhâya devamanussânan-ti' (*op. cit.*, p. 32).



But Buddha's mind is made up. He informs Ânando that on several occasions,<sup>1</sup> if the request had been made, it would have been granted. 'O, Ânando,<sup>2</sup> if thou hadst requested it of the Tathâgato, the Tathâgato would have rejected thy words just twice; then he would have acceded to the third request.' But it is too late now.

He proceeded, accompanied by Ânando, to a wood in the neighbourhood, called the *Mahâvanam*, or Great Forest. In that wood there stood a building something of the nature of a pagoda, hence known as the Kûṭâgârasâlâ,<sup>3</sup> which was the place of abode of the monks when spending the rainy season there. By Buddha's desire, Ânando assembled all the monks then living in the neighbourhood of Vesâlî,<sup>4</sup> and Buddha received them in the state-room (*upaṭṭhânasâlâ*)<sup>5</sup> of the monastery, that they might hear his final address. When they were assembled, Buddha reminded them of the precepts he had given them, and urged them to walk in the Noble Eightfold Path with unceasing diligence. In conclusion he spoke thus:

'Come<sup>6</sup> now, mendicants, I bid you farewell. Compounds are subject to dissolution. Succeed through diligence. Soon will the Tathâgato's extinction take

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. 33-35.

<sup>2</sup> 'Sace tvam, Ânanda, Tathâgatam yâceyyâsi, dve 'va te vâcâ Tathâgato paṭikkhipeyya, atha tatiyakam adhivâseyya' (*op. cit.*, p. 35).

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 36.

<sup>4</sup> Dr. Hoey has very clearly proved that Vesâlî must be identical with, or very close to, the modern town of Cherând, at the junction of the Ganges, Sôn, and Gogra rivers (*J. A. S. B.*, vol. lxix., part i., No. 1, 1900).

<sup>5</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 36.

<sup>6</sup> 'Handa dâni, bhikkhave, âmantayâmi vo : vayadhammâ saṅkhârâ, appamâdena sampâdetha : naciram Tathâgatassa parinibbânam bhavissati : ito tinṇam māsânam accayena Tathâgato parinibbâyissatîti' (*Mahâparinibbâna-Suttaṃ*, p. 37).





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



bâna-Suttam, which seem to be there quoted from an ancient metrical account of Buddha's life, relate what occurred in these words :

‘ Buddha,<sup>1</sup> having come to the River Kakutthâ  
 With its pellucid, glad, calm waters,  
 The thoroughly weary-looking Teacher plunged in,  
 The Tathâgato, quite matchless in the world.  
 Having both bathed and drunk, the Teacher crossed over,  
 Pre-eminent in the midst of the Order of Mendicants.  
 Here the Teacher, the Establisher in the Law, the Worshipful One,  
 The great Sage, came to the mango-grove (Ambavanam).  
 He addressed a mendicant, Cundako by name :  
 “ Spread for me my garment fourfold ; let me lie down.”  
 That Cundo, delighting in the Devoted One,  
 Quite speedily spread the robe fourfold.  
 The thoroughly weary-looking Teacher lay down.  
 Cundo also sat down there in front of him.’

Having rested for a time, Buddha and his followers drew near to a grove of *śâl*-trees on the bank of the Hiraññavatî River near Kusinârâ. ‘ Go, Ânando,’ said the old man, ‘ prepare thou for me between two twin *śâl*-trees a couch with the head northwards. I am exhausted, Ânando ; I shall lie down.’<sup>2</sup>

When he lay down on his simple couch, a strange scene is said to have been visible. ‘ Moreover<sup>3</sup> at that time the twin *śâl*-trees burst into full bloom with untimely flowers ; they strew the Tathâgato's body ; they sprinkle and scatter them over it out of reverence for the Tathâgato. Divine coral-tree blossoms, too, fall from the atmosphere : . . . divine sandal-tree powders, too, fall from the atmosphere ; they strew the Tathâgato's body, they are sprinkled and scattered over it : . . . divine

<sup>1</sup> Mahâparinibbâna-Suttam, p. 47 : ‘ Gantvâna Buddhho nadiyam Kakuttham,’ etc.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 49.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*

tabors, too, sound forth in the air : . . . divine chantings, too, go on in the air, out of reverence for the Tathâgato.'

But, though calling his disciples' attention to all this, Buddha valued something else far more. 'Not thus,<sup>1</sup> indeed, O Ânando,' he said, 'is the Tathâgato either honoured or revered or glorified or revered or respected. Whosoever, Ânando, whether male or female mendicant, or male or female lay adherent, continues to carry out in practice the law and the lesser directions, observing propriety, walking according to the lesser directions, he it is that honours, reveres, glorifies, reverences, respects the Tathâgato with the highest reverence.'

A monk named Upavâno then stood in front of Buddha and began to fan<sup>2</sup> him. Buddha repelled him, saying : 'Go away, mendicant ; do not stand in front of me.' When Ânando remonstrated with his master for thus driving away one who had come a long distance in order to be near him, Buddha explained and defended his own conduct in these words :

'In<sup>3</sup> large numbers in the ten spheres, Ânando, are the *devas* assembled to behold the Tathâgato, so that . . . all around, for a distance of twelve stages, there is not a space as large<sup>4</sup> as the top of a hair that is not pervaded with mighty *devas*. The *devas*, Ânando, murmur, saying, "Lo, we have come from afar to see the Tathâgato. Sometimes, on some occasions, Tathâgatos arise in the world, perfect, omniscient ; and to-day, at the last watch of the night, the Tathâgato's extinction will occur ; and this big mendicant, standing in front of the Tathâgato,

<sup>1</sup> Mahâparinibbâna-Suttam, p. 49.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 50.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. 50, 51.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. the saying of Heraclitus, Πάντα ψυχῶν εἶναι καὶ δαιμόνων πλήρη (Diog. Laertius, lib. ix., cap. i., § 6), and that of Pythagoras, Εἶναι τε πάντα τὸν ἀέρα ψυχῶν ἐμπλεων (*op. cit.*, lib. viii., cap. i., § 19, 32).



hinders us, and at the last moment we do not get the opportunity of seeing the Tathâgato." Thus do the *devas* murmur, Ânando.' When the latter inquired in what condition of mind he perceived the *devas* to be, Buddha replied: 'There are in the air, Ânando, *devas* concerned with earthly things; having strewn abroad their locks they wail; they fall as if down a sheer precipice; they turn about and revolve, saying: "Very soon will the Tathâgato become extinct; very soon will the Prosperous One become extinct; very soon will the Eye vanish in the world." . . . Moreover, those *devas* who are freed from passions, they quietly and composedly endure it, saying, "Compounds are impermanent; otherwise how would that be allowable here?"'

Ânando<sup>1</sup> was so much overcome with grief at the thought of his beloved master's approaching decease that he retired to weep in private. But Buddha, knowing this, sent for him, and did what he could to comfort him by praising him for his long and faithful service, and urging him to continue to walk in the Noble Eightfold Path.

Among other visitors who came to interview Buddha during his last moments was a monk named Subhaddo,<sup>2</sup> who belonged to a different sect. Struck by Buddha's conversation, this man joined the Order, and was the last convert made by Buddha.

The concluding scene is related in these words:

'Then indeed the Worshipful One addressed the mendicants: "Come<sup>3</sup> now, mendicants, I bid you farewell. Compounds are subject to dissolution. Prosper ye through diligence." This was the last speech of the Tathâgato.'

<sup>1</sup> Mahâparinibbâna-Suttam, pp. 53, 54.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. 56-60.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.* p. 61.

Then Buddha, becoming unconscious, passed through the four stages of ecstasy<sup>1</sup> (*jhānam*), and thus departed, or, in the language of the text we are quoting, 'became extinct.'<sup>2</sup>

Difficult as it is to separate the historical from the legendary in Buddha's life, yet it is clear that he was one of the most remarkable men—perhaps *the* most remarkable man—that India has ever produced. A great deal of the success of his teaching must have been due to his marvellous personal influence<sup>3</sup> over those with whom he came in contact. He was a man of great earnestness, of moral courage and great self-control, of unconquerable resolution, of deep though thwarted sympathy. His regard for his fellow-men was shown by the zeal and self-denial with which he laboured, during the greater part of his long life, to teach them what he firmly believed to be the highest of all truths, the only doctrine which would enable them to obtain release from their misery. The system of philosophy which he founded has for more than two thousand years influenced for good or ill vast multitudes of men throughout a very large part of the East. Even from his very failure we may learn much, and still more from his zeal in spreading his cheerless creed. His intellect was not of the highest order, though his imagination was powerfully developed. He does not seem to have been a man of deep spirituality, as was Socrates; but with whatever great philosopher of ancient times he may be compared, Buddha loses nothing from the comparison.

The lines which Sakko is related to have uttered on Buddha's death sum up the whole of Buddha's 'gospel,' if we may so style a philosophy which teaches that the

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 62.

<sup>2</sup> 'Parinibbāyi,' *idem*.

<sup>3</sup> 'Six Systems,' p. 30.



only possible way in which any living being, in heaven or on earth, can escape from misery and suffering is by becoming extinct. These verses may be translated thus :

‘Lo ! compounds are impermanent, subject to springing up and dissolution :

Having sprung up, they perish : happy is their suppression.’<sup>1</sup>

To those who are content with such a creed, may we not well apply the words of the Dhammapadam, one of the best known of the tractates included in the Buddhist canon :

‘Shrouded in darkness, do ye not seek a torch ?’<sup>2</sup>

Do not

‘Those wise answers of the far-off Sage—  
So wise, they shut out God—and can enchain  
To-day, in narrow bands of foolishness,  
The subtle Eastern brain’<sup>3</sup>

—showing as they do man’s need of a Divine revelation—appeal to us, by their very sadness and despairing courage, to bear to Buddha’s disciples of the present day the good news of Him who said so long ago, and still says to the sorrowing, suffering, wandering, and doubting of our own times :

‘I am the Light of the World ; he that followeth Me shall not walk in the darkness, but shall have the Light of Life’ ?<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> ‘Aniccâ vata sañkhârâ, uppâdavayadhammino :  
Uppajjitvâ nirujjhanti : tesam vûpasamo sukho-ti.’

Mahâparinibbâna-Suttam, p. 62.

For a translation of the commentary on these lines, *vide* Rhys Davids’ Hibbert Lectures for 1881, pp. 212-214.

<sup>2</sup> ‘Andhakârena onaddhâ padîpam na gavessatha ?’

Dhammapadam, sl. 146.

<sup>3</sup> L. Morris, ‘The Wanderer.’

<sup>4</sup> ‘Εγώ εἰμι τὸ φῶς τοῦ κόσμου· ὁ ἀκολουθῶν μοι οὐ μὴ περιπατήσῃ ἐν τῇ σκοτίᾳ, ἀλλ’ ἔξει τὸ φῶς τῆς ζωῆς.

## LECTURE II

### THE CHIEF DOCTRINES OF BUDDHISM

' O miseras hominum mentes, O pectora cæca !  
Qualibus in tenebris vitæ quantisque periclis  
Degitur hoc ævi quodcumque est ! Nonne videre  
Nil aliud sibi naturam latrare, nisi ut, *cui*  
*Corpore seiunctus dolor absit*, menti' fruatur  
Iucundo sensu, *cura semotu' metuque* ?  
Ergo corpoream ad naturam pauca videmus  
Esse opus omnino, *quæ demant cumque dolorem*,  
Delicias quoque uti multas substernere possint.'

LUCRETIVS, lib. ii., 14-22.

THE whole of the doctrines of 'orthodox' Buddhism rest solely and entirely upon the dogmatic teaching of Buddha himself. These may in some instances seem to appeal to reason and experience; in other cases, however,<sup>1</sup> they absolutely contradict both. Yet all these statements are supported by the authority of the sacred books of the Pāli or Southern Canon, which were composed at uncertain and varying dates after

<sup>1</sup> As, for example, what Buddha is related to have stated about his own previous existences, about the gods and demons, the heavens and the hells, about the size and configuration of the various worlds and their inhabitants, about the cause of the eclipses of the sun and moon, and many other such matters, some of which are treated of in the present lecture.



Buddha's death—as far as their present form is concerned—and handed down by oral tradition among his followers until they were finally committed to writing from memory about eighty<sup>1</sup> years before the Christian era.

In the present lecture we are not called upon to deal with the *corruptions* of Buddhism, which have practically changed a philosophy with no room for God in it into a number of polytheistic religions. These religions, it is true, though varying very much among themselves, have for many centuries continued to exist in different countries, and they claim the allegiance of a very large number of our fellow-creatures. But they do not fairly represent Buddhism in its original form, and therefore can no more be dealt with as if they did than can Roman Catholic and Greek Christianity be fairly brought forward as giving a correct idea of the teaching of Jesus Christ. On the other hand, although Buddhism, as taught by its founder himself, can hardly be said to exist any longer except in the ancient Pāli books (though these, too, show evident proofs of the early growth of myth), yet it is essential to a proper comprehension of any one of the many forms of modern Buddhism to know what were the doctrines which Buddha taught. Making every allowance for the corrections which found their way into the books of the Pāli Canon before they assumed their present form, it is still possible by carefully studying those works to obtain a fairly correct general idea of the teaching of Buddha as it has been handed down by tradition from the lips of his earliest disciples.

The canonical books of the Buddhists consist of three main divisions, called the 'Three Piṭakas' (*Tīpiṭakam*, *tini piṭikāni*, or *piṭakattayam*). These are named respec-

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Max Müller, 'Six Systems of Indian Philosophy,' p. 5.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



distinctly that the Southern Canon was not reduced to writing till the first century B.C., under King Vaṭṭa-gâmani (about 80 B.C.). 'Before this time,' they say, 'the wise monks had handed down the texts of the Tipiṭakam orally, and also the Aṭṭhakathâ (commentary). At this time the monks, perceiving the decay of beings, assembled, and, in order that the Law might endure for a long time, they caused it to be written down.' But when we remember how habitually in India literary compositions of enormous length were handed down from generation to generation by oral tradition, it is not difficult to believe that a great deal of the Three Piṭakas may be very ancient. It is not easy to identify for certain any of the tractates in the Canon with those mentioned by name in the inscriptions of Aṣoka;<sup>1</sup> yet the identity of the Buddhist formula, which may be called the creed of Buddhism, as given in the Mahâvaggo,<sup>2</sup> with that inscribed by Aṣoka's orders on monuments in so many

---

Magadhî of King Aṣoka's inscriptions, *and seems much more recent in character*, renders this somewhat doubtful. The absurd fables which are found even in the Three Pitakas must have required a considerable time for their development. All this leads me to agree with Barth ('Religions of India,' pp. 102, 103, note) in doubting whether the Three Piṭakas are as ancient as Professor Rhys Davids thinks.

<sup>1</sup> Especially in the Bairat inscription; but see the matter discussed in Monier-Williams' 'Buddhism,' pp. 53-70, and Bishop Copleston's 'Buddhism,' pp. 269, 274. The tractates specially mentioned in that inscription are Vinaya-samukasa, Ariyavasa, Anâgata-bhaya, Muni-gâthâ, Upatisa-pasina, Moneyasûta, and the Sermon to Râhulo. Thomas ('The Early Faith of Aṣoka,' p. 23 *et seq.*) shows that Aṣoka was originally a Jaina (as was Candragupta, his grandson), and that the title 'devānampiya' ('beloved of the gods') which he bears in some of his inscriptions was a conventional title among the Jainas (as is evident from the Kalpa-Sutra). It is omitted in the Bhabra inscription, because the Buddhist faith '*ipso facto* repudiated all gods' (*op. cit.*, p. 55).

<sup>2</sup> Mahâvaggo, i. 23 : 5, quoted above, Lecture I., p. 41, note 1.

parts of India, and the fact that there is no discrepancy in the testimony as to the nature of Buddha's teaching given in the different parts of the Three Piṭakas—all this enables us to speak with a near approach to absolute certainty as to what the main doctrines were which he taught. There can be no doubt that the speeches attributed to Buddha in the Three Piṭakas represent very correctly what he actually said.

As we have already seen, Buddha had no room for God in his philosophy. Hence there could be no claim in favour of the inspiration of these books, or, indeed, of any portion of his teaching. It is all supposed to have flashed upon him suddenly on the night when he became a Buddha. He had previously learnt by experience the misery of existence—an existence apart from God. He now believed that he had learnt three other things—the cause of this misery and suffering, the possibility of its cessation, and the way to attain to that end. The explanation of these four points constitutes almost the whole of his teaching, and certainly its most important part. Hence it is that we so frequently find these foundation 'truths' repeated again and again in the sacred books.

We proceed to give a few more extracts, in order to let Buddha and one of his most eminent disciples respectively explain to us exactly what they thought it most necessary for men to know.

On one occasion, some time before his death, going to Koṭigâmo with a large company of mendicants, Buddha is related to have addressed them thus :<sup>1</sup>

‘ O mendicants,<sup>2</sup> it is through want of knowledge and

<sup>1</sup> Mahâparinibbâna-Suttam, § 2, 1, p. 15.

<sup>2</sup> Mahâparinibbâna-Suttam, § 2, 1 : ‘ Catunnam, bhikkhave, ariya-saccânam ananubodhâ appativedhâ evam idaṃ dīgham addhānam sandhāvitam, samsaritam, mamañ-c’eva tumhākañ-ca. . . . Tayidam,



non-comprehension of the Four Noble Truths that this long road, both mine and yours, has been traversed and transmigrated.' He then mentions the Four Truths: The Noble Truth of Suffering, that of the Origin of Suffering, that of the Cessation of Suffering, and that of the Way to the Attainment of the Cessation of Suffering, and continues:

'But when, O mendicants, the Noble Truth of Suffering has been fully known and comprehended, when the Noble Truth of the Origin of Suffering has been fully known and comprehended, when the Noble Truth of the Cessation of Suffering has been fully known and comprehended, when the Noble Truth of the Way to the Attainment of the Cessation of Suffering has been fully known and comprehended, the thirst for existence is eradicated, lust is exhausted; thenceforth there is no rebirth.' The text goes on to say: 'This the Worshipful One said; having thus spoken, the Prosperous One, the Teacher, said this furthermore:

“Through the non-perception of the Four Noble Truths as they really are,  
The long road has been transmigrated in those, in those very births.  
Those, these have been seen: lust is eradicated;  
The root of suffering is utterly extirpated; henceforth there is no rebirth.”

bhikkhave, dukkham ariyasaccam anubuddham paṭividdham, dukkhasamudayam ariyasaccam anubuddham paṭividdham, dukkhanirodham ariyasaccam anubuddham paṭividdham, dukkhanirodhagāminī paṭipadā ariyasaccam anubuddham paṭividdham, ucchinnā bhavatanhā, khīṇā bhavanetti, n'atthi dāni punabbhavo ti. Idam avoca Bhagavā, idam vatvā Sugato, athāparam etad avoca Satthā:

“Catunnam ariyasaccānaṃ yathābhūtaṃ adassanā  
Saṃsitam dīgham addhānaṃ tāsū tās' eva jātisū:  
Tāni etāni diṭṭhāni, bhavanetti samūhatā,  
Ucchinnamūlaṃ dukkhassa; n'atthi dāni punabbhavo, ti.”

In the *Saccavibhaṅgo*, at Buddha's bidding, Sāriputto explains this doctrine at full length. 'Birth,' he says, 'is painful<sup>1</sup>; old age is painful; sickness is painful; death is painful; grief, lamentation, pain, dejection, despair, are painful; the wish which one does not obtain, that, too, is painful; in short, the five elements of attachment to existence are painful.' He then goes on to explain the full meaning of each term, and to show how much misery is involved in birth and rebirth, in old age, sickness, and death, in grief, disappointment, and despair, and in physical pain. He points out how those beings who are liable to birth<sup>2</sup> feel within them the longing, 'Ah,<sup>3</sup> would that we might not be born, would that birth came not to us!' The same longing is felt by all beings who are exposed to sickness, old age, and death; yet in all alike the longing is torture, for it is in vain. 'This is not to be obtained by longing.'<sup>4</sup> After this he mentions the five elements of attachment to existence (*Panc'upādānakkhandhā*) — form<sup>5</sup>, sensation, percep-

<sup>1</sup> The original runs thus: 'Jāti pi dukkhā, jarā pi dukkhā, vyādhī pi dukkhā, maraṇaṃ pi dukkhā, soka-parideva-dukkha-domanassa-upāyāsā dukkhā; yaṃ p'iccham na labhati, tam pi dukkham; sañkhittena pañc' upādānakkhandhā dukkhā' (*Saccavibhaṅgo*, ii, § 1).

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Lucretius' remark on the babe's wailing when born (lib. v., vv. 222-227):

'Tum porro puer, ut sævis proiectus ab undis  
Navita, nudus humi iacet, infans, indigus omni  
Vitali auxilio, cum primum in luminis oras  
Nixibus ex alveo matris nativa profudit,  
Vagituque locum lugubri complet, ut æquum'st  
Cui tantum in vita restet transire malorum.'

<sup>3</sup> 'Aho! vata mayaṃ na jātidhammā assāma, na-ca vata no jāt āgaccheyyā-ti' (*Saccavibhaṅgo*, § 9).

<sup>4</sup> 'Na kho paṇ' etam icchāya pattabbam.'

<sup>5</sup> 'Rūp-upādānakkhandho, vedan-upādānakkhandho, saññupādānakkhandho, sañkhār-upādānakkhandho, viññan-upādānakkhandhā' (§ 10)



tion, components, consciousness—and classes under the Origin of Suffering the thirst<sup>1</sup> which manifests itself in desire for future existence, happiness, and joy, which thirst is comprised under three heads: Thirst for sensual pleasure, thirst for (eternal)<sup>2</sup> existence, and thirst for the (instant) cessation of existence. The Noble Truth of the Way to the Attainment of the Cessation of Existence is called the Noble Eightfold Path, and is explained (as we have already seen) as consisting in the following: ‘Perfect opinion, perfect resolve, perfect speech, perfect employment, perfect conduct, perfect exertion, perfect thought, perfect self-concentration.’<sup>3</sup>

The last and final step on this path leads the devotee through four stages of mystic trance (*jhānam*), the fourth of which is thus described: ‘Through abandonment of pleasure and abandonment of pain, and through the disappearance of the previously experienced enjoyment and dejection, having attained to painless, pleasureless indifference of mind and purity, to the fourth ecstasy, he thus abides. This, O friend, is called perfect meditation.’<sup>4</sup>

When a man has passed through all these various stages he has reached *Arahat*-ship, which is often called *Nirvāṇa* (*Nibbānam*).

Much discussion has taken place regarding the precise meaning of this term, but scholars are now in the main

<sup>1</sup> ‘Vāyaṃ taṇhā ponobbhavikānandirāga-sahagatā tatra tatrābhini-dinī: seyyathidaṃ: kāma-taṇhā, bhava-taṇhā, vibhava-taṇhā’ (iii., § 8).

<sup>2</sup> See Childers’ Pālī Dictionary, s.v. Vibhavo.

<sup>3</sup> ‘Ayaṃ eva ariyo aṭṭhaṅgiko Maggo: seyyathidaṃ: Sammādiṭṭhi, sammāsaṅkappo, sammāvācā, sammākammanto, sammā-ājīvo, sammā-vāyāmo, sammāsati, sammāsamādhī’ (iii., § 10).

<sup>4</sup> ‘Sūkhassa-ca pahānā, dukkhassa-ca pahānā, pubbe-ca somanassa-domanassānam ālthagamā, addukkham asukham upekkhāsati - pāri-suddhiṃ catutthajjhānam upasampajja viharati. Ayaṃ vuccat’, āvuso, Sammāsamādhī’ (iv., § 8).

agreed as to what is denoted thereby. It literally means *extinction*,<sup>1</sup> the being *puffed out* of a flame. But it would be incorrect to understand by this the destruction of the human spirit, of the self, the personality, the *ego*; for the Buddhist does not acknowledge the existence of human personality, much less that of an immortal spirit, in man. A human being is said to be made up of the five 'elements of existence' (*Khandhos*) mentioned above—form, sensation, perception, components, consciousness. When he dies these are utterly destroyed, and the man entirely ceases to exist. But a new set of *Khandhos* is immediately produced, and these, which constitute a new being (technically called *Nāmarūpam*, 'name and form'), inherit and carry on the man's *character*<sup>2</sup> and his *Karma* (*Pālī Kammam*; literally, 'deed'), the net result of all his deeds, good and bad. The good produce good results and happiness in the next state of existence, which may be passed either in this or in some other world, or in some of the numerous Buddhist heavens. They place him in a better position for attaining merit, and thereby approaching nearer the *summum bonum* of the Buddhist's hope, *Nirvāṇa*. His evil deeds also have their own fruit, either in this or in some other life, for it is said:<sup>3</sup>

'The evil done by one is being suffered for by one's self,  
The evil not done by one is being cleared away by one's self:  
'The pure and the impure separately: one does not purify another.'

---

<sup>1</sup> *Nirvāṇam* (*Pālī Nibbānam*) is derived from the negative or primitive particle *nis* and the root *vā*, 'to blow' (from which comes the Sanskrit *vāta*, Latin *ventus*, English *wind*), with the termination *-nam*. Hence it literally means 'the being puffed out,' or 'the state of being puffed out.' In Sanskrit the word is used as an adjective (*nirvāṇa*, m., f., n.), meaning 'blown out,' of a lamp.

<sup>2</sup> Hibbert Lectures, R. Davids, p. 92.

<sup>3</sup> 'Attanā va katam pāpam attanā sañkilissati,  
Attanā akatam pāpam attanā va visujjhati:  
Suddhī asudhī paccattam : n'añño aññaṃ visodhaye.'

Dhammapadam, sl. 165.



And, again :<sup>1</sup>

‘ The wicked man, too, sees good, until his evil matureth ;  
And when his evil matureth, then the wicked man sees evil things.  
The good man, too, sees evil,  
Until his good matureth ;  
And when his good matureth,  
Then the good man sees good things.’

Once more :<sup>2</sup>

‘ Here he grieves, hereafter grieves  
The evil-doer, in both worlds he grieves ;  
That man grieves, that man is afflicted,  
Having seen his own vile deed.

<sup>1</sup> ‘ Pāpo pi passatī bhadraṃ, yāva pāpaṃ na paccati ;  
Yadā-ca paccatī pāpaṃ, atha pāpo pāpāni passati.  
Bhadro pi passatī pāpaṃ,  
Yāva bhadraṃ na paccati ;  
Yadā-ca paccatī bhadraṃ,  
Atha bhadro bhadraṇi passati.’

*Ibid.*, śll. 119, 120.

<sup>2</sup> ‘ Idha socati, pecca socati  
Pāpakārī, ubhayattha socati ;  
So socati, so vihaññati,  
Disvā kammakiliṭṭhaṃ attano.  
Idha modati, pecca modati  
Katapuñño, ubhayattha modati ;  
So modati, so pamodati,  
Disvā kammavisuddhiṃ attano.  
Idha tappati, pecca tappati  
Pāpakārī, ubhayattha tappati ;  
Pāpaṃ me katan-ti tappati :  
Bhiyyo tappati duggatiṃ gato.  
Idha nandati, pecca nandati  
Katapuñño, ubhayattha nandati ;  
Puññaṃ me katan-ti nandati,  
Bhiyyo nandati suggaṭṭhiṃ \* gato.’

*Ibid.*, śll. 15-18.

\* In the commentary explained as the Tusitā heaven.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



of some special good deed done here, be born again in one of the higher heavens as a god. After that, on account of an evil deed done in a previous birth, he may be born into this world once more in the form of a man suffering from some grievous infirmity. This is expressed by the remarkable lines :<sup>1</sup>

‘ The man long exiled, safely come from afar,  
 Relatives, friends, and well-wishers welcome when come :  
 Even so the well-doer, too, gone across from this world,  
 His good deeds accept, as relatives a dear one come.’

But this succession of births and deaths tends to go on to all eternity, for in each successive existence a stock of merit or guilt or both is ever being laid up, which must work itself out in future births. However much happiness there may be in any existence, even in that of one of the *devas*, it must be all embittered by the terrible thought that all is transitory and is destined to fade away, while death is sure to come at last, death which all beings, men and gods alike, dread ;<sup>2</sup> for, as Buddha said : ‘ All beings that have not overcome death are subject to death, having death as their goal.’<sup>3</sup>

‘ All beings will die : for life ends in death :  
 According to their deeds shall they go, entering on the fruit of  
 good and evil.’<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> ‘ Cirappavāsiṃ purisaṃ dūrato sotthim āgataṃ  
 Ñātimittā suhajjā-ca abhinandanti āgataṃ ;  
 Tath’ eva katapuññaṃ pi asmā lokā paraṃ gataṃ  
 Puññāni patigaṇhanti piyaṃ ñātīva āgataṃ.’

Dham., śll. 219, 220.

<sup>2</sup> ‘ Sabbe tasanti daṇḍassa, sabbe bhāyanti maccuno.’

*Ibid.*, śl. 129.

<sup>3</sup> ‘ Sabbe sattā . . . maraṇa-dhammā maraṇa-pariyosānā maraṇam anatītā’ (Kosala-Saṃyuttaṃ, III., iii., § 2 : 5).

<sup>4</sup> ‘ Sabbe sattā marissanti : maraṇantaṃ hi jīvitaṃ :  
 Yathā kammam gamissanti, puñña-pāpa-phalūpagā.’

*Ibid.*, 5.

Since the Buddha declares birth to be suffering, death to be suffering, and all existence to be suffering, it follows that the only thing worthy of attention is the means of escape from this suffering. In order to discover this, it is necessary to learn the cause of suffering—that is, of existence itself. For if one's deeds do not cease to bear fruit, for good or ill, as long as the elements of existence (*Khandhos*) are produced, it is clear that death by no means releases us from our misery, not being the end of existence. In the 'Discourse concerning the Inauguration of the Dominion of the Law,' Buddha asserts that the cause or origin of the suffering is thirst (*taṇhā*), and that this thirst is threefold—for sensual pleasure, for eternal existence, and for instant annihilation. If it were not for this thirst, this impulse to seek for these things, existence, and with it suffering, would cease. The way, then, to escape from suffering is to escape from this thirst. To do this, however, it is again needful to discover the source which gives rise to it. Regarding this, we are informed that Buddha reflected immediately after attaining Buddhahood, and the result of his reflections is thus stated in the *Mahāvaggo*:<sup>1</sup>

'Then the Prosperous One during the first watch of the night fixed his mind upon the chain of Causation (*Paṭicca-*

---

So also it is said in the *Dhammapadam* :

'Na antalikkhe, na samuddamajjhe,  
Na pabbatānaṃ vivaraṃ pavissa,  
Na vijjatī so jagatippadeso,  
Yatthaṭṭhitam nappasahetha maccu.'

Dham., sl. 128.

Note that the gods also must die and transmigrate as do men, though their lives are much longer and happier than ours. They are also exposed to *Māro's* attacks (*Samy.-Nik.*, V., v., § 7 : 5).

<sup>1</sup> *Mahāvaggo*, I. i. 2.



samuppādo) in direct and in reverse order.' 'In<sup>1</sup> consequence of Ignorance arise the Aggregations' (*saṅkhārā* = *khandhā* according to the Commentary); 'in consequence of the Aggregations Consciousness; in consequence of Consciousness, Name-and-Form; in consequence of Name-and-Form, the Six Organs of Sense; in consequence of the Six Organs of Sense, Contact; in consequence of Contact, Sensation; in consequence of Sensation, Thirst; in consequence of Thirst, Attachment to Existence' (*Upādānaṃ*; literally, 'Fuel'); 'in consequence of Attachment to Existence, Existence; in consequence of Existence, Birth; in consequence of Birth, Old Age, Death, Grief, Lamentation, Pain, Dejection, Despair. Such is the origination of this whole mass of suffering. Again, in consequence of the destruction of Ignorance, which consists in deliverance from desire, the Aggregations are destroyed; in consequence of the destruction of the Aggregations, Consciousness; in consequence of the destruction of Consciousness, Name-and-Form; in consequence of the destruction of Name-and-Form, the Six Organs of Sense; in consequence of the destruction of the Six Organs of Sense, Contact; in consequence of the destruction of Contact, Sensation; in consequence of the destruction of Sensation, Thirst; in consequence of the destruction of Thirst, Attachment to Existence; in consequence of the destruction of Attachment to Existence, Existence; in consequence of the destruction of Existence, Birth; in consequence of the destruction of

<sup>1</sup> The Pālī text is as follows: 'Avijjā-paccayā saṅkhārā, sankhārapaccayā viññāṇaṃ, viññāṇappaccayā nāma-rūpaṃ, nāma-rūpappaccayā salāyatanaṃ, salāyatanaappaccayā phasso, phassappaccayā vedanā, vedanappaccayā taṇhā, taṇhappaccayā upādānaṃ, upādānappaccayā bhavo, bhavappaccayā jāti, jātippaccayā jarā-maraṇaṃ soka-parideva-dukka-domanass'-upāyāsā sambhavanti.'





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



The only way to get rid of suffering, therefore, is to suppress these feelings and everything else that leads to the Thirst for Existence. Buddha taught that self-torture, such as that practised by many of the ascetics of his time, and which he had for some time practised himself, could not accomplish this.<sup>1</sup> His method was what he calls the 'Middle Way'—the Golden Mean, as it were—between the two extremes, of Asceticism, on the one hand, and a worldly life on the other. What he meant by the Middle Way is clear from his own life, and from that which he taught his fellow-mendicants to live. Its object was to train the mind to absolute indifference to pleasure and pain, to life and death. When a man has reached this stage, he has burst all the bonds which bind him to existence, and therefore has<sup>2</sup> reached *avahat*-ship, the next step to Nirvāṇa itself. The *extinction* here referred to, however, is primarily the extinction of *passion*, not that of existence. But when passion has fully died away, the fuel which supports the flame of existence burns out, and the fire itself becomes extinct. Here we have the meaning of the term *Nirvāṇa*. A man who has attained this state of indifference and freedom from passion is often spoken of as having entered Nirvāṇa while still alive. At other times the entrance into Nirvāṇa is mentioned with reference to his death. The only way to attain to this state is by walking in the Noble Eightfold Path of Perfect Opinion, etc., the various steps in which have been already mentioned. The last stage in this Path is that of Perfect Self-concentration, or Perfect Abstraction from all out-

<sup>1</sup> See the whole subject discussed in Māra-Saṃyutta (Saṃyutta-Nikāyo, Sect. I., book iv.), cap. i., § 1. *Vide* also Dham., sl. 141, 142.

<sup>2</sup> Dham., cap. vii., sl. 90 *et seq.*

'Gataddhino visokassa vip̐pamuttassa sabbadhi  
Sabbaganthappahīnassa pariḷāho na vijjati.'

ward things. Only by reaching this can a man, or any other sentient being, attain to release from suffering.

As we shall see later, Buddha seems to have tacitly accepted as true many of the philosophical ideas prevalent in the India of his day, especially those which, as Professor Max Müller has proved,<sup>1</sup> were common to all Indian systems of philosophy. One of the most noted of these was that of the existence of the *Ātmā*,<sup>2</sup> or Self, which is identical with what in Western philosophy was called the 'Animus Mundi.' This, Hindū philosophy taught, is real; all else is unreal, delusion (*māyā*). Buddha, however, taught that existence and suffering are real enough, but only transitory. He does not teach anything clearly about the *Self*, that of man or that higher Self (*Paramātmā*) of which we have spoken. Yet some have fancied that they can detect a faint conception of the latter underlying his teaching about the transitoriness of things.<sup>3</sup> He shows that transitory things are not the

<sup>1</sup> 'Six Systems of Indian Philosophy,' p. 137 *et seq.* He mentions, among other ideas common to all the systems alike, belief in metempsychosis, in Karma, and a tendency to pessimism.

<sup>2</sup> Rhys Davids points out that though, in speaking to the unconverted, Buddha allows of the *possibility* that a good man should after death be united with Brahmā (Dialogue with Vāsetṭha, 'Buddhist Suttas from the Pālī,' p. 203), yet 'such a union with Brahmā, as is here referred to, is not supposed, in early Buddhism, to be the highest thing which men should seek after. . . . There can be no finality in such a union; it must end, like every other life save that of the *Arahat*, in rebirth. And far better than that, an aim far worthier of the truly intelligent man, is to reach here on earth the 'Nirvāṇa of a perfect life in Arahatship' (Hibbert Lectures, pp. 69, 70). Brahmā, in Buddhist theology, is only a sort of angel, perishable like all other beings (see the note on 'Absorption' in Copleston's 'Buddhism,' pp. 216-218).

<sup>3</sup> Such is Professor Oldenberg's opinion ('Buddha,' English translation, pp. 214-216). Cf. the verses:

'Sabbe saṅkhārā aniccā-ti, yadā paññāya passati,  
Atha nibbindatī dukkhe; esa maggo visuddhiyā.



Self, though he does not state definitely whether the Self exists at all<sup>1</sup> or not. A story is told of an inquirer<sup>2</sup> who came and asked him this very question, but Buddha preserved a complete silence, and would neither assert nor deny the existence of the Self.

He seems, however, to teach that, if his disciples grasp the idea that there is no *Ego*, they will find it easier to break the chain that binds them to existence.<sup>3</sup> Therefore, shortly after attaining Buddhahood, he addressed his first five disciples thus: 'The form,<sup>4</sup> O mendicants,

---

Sabbe sañkhārā dukkhā-ti, yadā paññāya passati,  
Atha nibbindatī dukkhe; esa maggo visuddhiyā.  
Sabbe dhammā anattā-ti, yadā paññāya passati,  
Atha nibbindatī dukkhe; esa maggo visuddhiyā.'

Dham., sll. 277-279.

<sup>1</sup> But the idea that the Ego does not exist seems to lie at the root of much of Buddha's teaching. Hence it is that not 'personality,' but merely the term 'name and form' (*nāmarūpaṃ*), is used for 'individuality' in the explanation of the chain of causation already quoted. Moreover, in complete accordance with all this, and supporting his teaching by references to the Pāli canonical books, Nāgāseno disproves the existence of the Ego, showing that what is supposed to be a person is merely a collection of the five Khandhos (*Milindapañho*, pp. 25-28), and quoting in support of this Bhikkhunī-Saṃyutta (*Saṃyutta-Nikāyo*, book v.), § 10: 6. See Rhys Davids, *Hibbert Lectures for 1881*, pp. 208, 212-214. In the *Fo-sho-hing-tsan-king* (iv., § 1449) the same idea is expressed in these words: 'All is empty! neither 'self' nor place for "self," but all the world is like a phantasy: this is the way to regard ourselves, as but a heap of composite qualities (*samskāra*) (Beal's translation in 'Sacred Books of the East').

<sup>2</sup> *Saṃyutta-Nikāyo*, vol. ii., quoted by Oldenberg, 'Buddha,' English translation, pp. 272, 273.

<sup>3</sup> Hence the doctrine of *self* (*attavāda* or *sakkayaditṭhi*) has to be renounced at the very beginning of the way to Arahatsip; it is the first 'fetter' — *saṃyojanam* (Rhys Davids, *Hibbert Lectures*, p. 208).

<sup>4</sup> *Mahāvaggo*, i., § 6: 38-46.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



assert that he does so.<sup>1</sup> In accordance with this it is said in the following verses of the Dhammapadam :<sup>2</sup>

‘ Truly to many a refuge go they, to mountains and groves,  
To gardens and tree-shrines, men terror-stricken.  
This refuge indeed is not safe,  
This refuge indeed is not the highest,  
Not to this refuge having come  
Is one freed from all suffering.  
But he, who to both Buddha and the Law  
And the Community has gone for refuge,  
The four Noble Truths  
By perfect understanding doth he see,—  
Suffering, suffering’s origination,  
And suffering’s termination,  
And the Noble Eightfold Path  
Leading to the cessation of suffering.  
This indeed is the safe refuge, this is the highest refuge :  
To this refuge having come is one freed from all suffering.’

In considering the question of the *summum bonum* of Buddhism and the desire to escape from existence, it

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* the Saraṇagamanam previously quoted, p. 38.

<sup>2</sup> ‘ Bahum ve saraṇam yanti pabbatāni vanāni-ca  
Ārāmarukkha-cetyāni manussā bhayatajjitā.  
N’ etaṃ kho saraṇam khemaṃ,  
N’ etaṃ kho saraṇam uttamam,  
N’ etaṃ saraṇam āgama  
Sabba-dukkhā pamuccati.  
Yo-ca Buddhañ-ca Dhammañ-ca  
Saṃghañ-ca saraṇam gato,  
Cattāri ariyasaccāni  
Sammapaññāya passati,—  
Dukkham, dukkhasamuppādam,  
Dukkhasa-ca atikkamaṃ,  
Aryañ-c’atthaṅgikaṃ maggaṃ  
Dukkūpasamagāminam.  
Etaṃ kho saraṇam khemaṃ, etaṃ saraṇam uttamam,  
Etaṃ saraṇam āgama sabba-dukkhā pamuccati.’

must be borne in mind that Buddha adopted from the popular belief of his day the doctrine of transmigration. As he did not teach the existence of a spirit in man, it is evident that the doctrine of metempsychosis as inculcated by Buddha was in some respects different from that already in vogue. His doctrine was that, while the name-and-form which, with the other four *Khandhos*, make up a man (or it may be a *deva* or other sentient being) are separated and perish at death, yet the result of the man's conduct, his <sup>1</sup> *character*, his *Karma*, passes on to another being which comes into existence at his death, unless in the case of an *arahat* or perfect man. To explain this the illustration of a flame is used. If a number of pieces of tinder are placed close together in a line, and the first of them is set on fire and then blown upon, the flame on it may be extinguished, yet being blown over to the next piece a new flame is produced, the same, and yet not the same, as the first flame. So the life of one being is extinguished, but at the same<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Rhys Davids, Hibbert Lectures for 1881, p. 92.

<sup>2</sup> *Vide* Rhys Davids, Hibbert Lectures, p. 101. Another and somewhat different illustration is given by the sage Nāgaseno to King Milindo (Milinda-pañho, p. 77) when the latter asks what transmigration is. The sage says: 'Idha, mahârâja, jâto, idh' eva marati, idha mato aññatra uppajjati, tahiṃ jâto tahiṃ yeva marati, tahiṃ mato aññatra uppajjati: evaṃ kho, mahârâja, saṃsâro hotîti.—Opammaṃ karohîti.—Yathâ, mahârâja, kocid-eva puriso pakkam ambam khâditvâ atthiṃ ropeyya, tato mahanto ambarukkho nibbattitvâ phalâni dadeyya, atha so puriso tato pi pakkam ambam khâditvâ atthiṃ ropeyya, tato pi mahanto amharukkho nibbattitvâ phalâni dadeyya, evam etesam rukkhânam koṭi na paññâyati; evam-eva kho, mahârâja, idha jâto idh' eva marati, idha mato aññatra uppajjati; evaṃ kho, mahârâja, saṃsâro hotîti.'—'One born here, great king, dies just here; having died here he comes into existence elsewhere: born there he dies just there; having died there he comes into existence elsewhere: thus indeed, great king, does transmigration come to pass.—Give an illus-



moment another being starts into life, to which the *Karma* of the former is transferred. This process goes on through countless ages. It has gone on in the past with Buddha himself, for in the *Cariyā-Piṭakam*<sup>1</sup> he relates many tales regarding his previous states of existence as a man, a monkey, an elephant, and so on, relating how in each stage he exhibited certain perfections, gradually progressing in excellence, until in his last birth he became Siddhârtha. An ordinary being does not remember anything of his own previous births, but when Gotamo attained Buddhahood he remembered everything that had befallen him in the past.

All existence is suffering, and all pain or joy that befalls a man in this life (except in certain instances<sup>2</sup>) is the result of previous good or bad actions. Hence the striking words in which Buddha describes the amount of suffering which men endure.

‘The transmigration (*samsāro*) of beings, O mendicants,’ he says,<sup>3</sup> ‘has its beginning in eternity. The opening cannot be found from which, having come forth,

---

tration.—As, great king, were any man whatever, having eaten a ripe mango, to plant the kernel, a great mango-tree having sprung up thence would give its fruits : and were that man, having eaten a ripe mango therefrom also, to plant the kernel, a great mango-tree, having sprung up thence also, would give its fruits : thus no end is found of these trees. Even thus indeed, great king, one born here dies just here ; having died here he comes into existence elsewhere,’ etc.

<sup>1</sup> *Cariyā-Piṭakam*, book iii., story vii. (as a Monkey-king) ; book ii., story i. (as a Virtuous Elephant).

<sup>2</sup> *Vide* Milinda-Pañho, Trenckner’s edition, p. 134.

<sup>3</sup> *Samyutta - Nikāyo*, vol. i., quoted by Oldenberg, ‘Buddha,’ pp. 216, 217. Professor Rhys Davids (Hibbert Lectures for 1881, p. 73) well says, in reference especially to the doctrine of transmigration : ‘Buddhism was, in a great degree, the pouring of new wine into old bottles.’





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



to terrify him.<sup>1</sup> On each occasion Buddha recognises 'evil Māro' and discomfits him. But Māro's efforts are not directed against Buddha alone. In the Bhikkhuni-Samyuttam, one of the books contained in the Samyutta-Nikāyo, we find him endeavouring to disturb the calm of the female Buddhist mendicants by the same arts, but always failing. We quote one of these episodes to show, not the constancy of the tempted woman, or even the nature of the temptation, but rather the Buddhist view of the universality of suffering.

The story runs thus. One day Māro found a certain female mendicant or Buddhist nun, called Upacālā, seated at the foot of a tree to take the usual mid-day rest. Approaching her, he tried to disturb her equanimity by leading her to think of and long for the joys promised to the virtuous in the after-life. The desire for such things, being 'otherworldliness,' would injure her as much as any other desire, because it would bring her again into bondage to that Thirst for Existence which is the cause of so much suffering. Māro thus addresses her :

'Where<sup>2</sup> dost thou then desire to be reborn, O nun ?'

<sup>1</sup> The whole of the 'Māra-Samyutta' (book iv. of the Samyutta-Nikāyo) is taken up with the account of Māro's attempts to lead Buddha astray. See also Mahāparinibbāna-Suttaṃ, pp. 24-26 and 30-32. Māro is also called 'Antako,' 'the Ender,' = the Sanskrit *Antaka* with the same meaning, which in the Atharva Veda is used as equivalent to Yama, the god of death.

<sup>2</sup> 'Kattha nu tvam, bhikkhuni, uppajjitu-kāmā ?-ti.'

'Na khvāham, āvuso, katthaci uppajjitu-kāmā-ti.'

'Tāvatimsā-ca Yāmā-ca Tusitā-cāpi devatā,  
Nimmānaratino devā, ye devā Vasavattino ;  
Tattha cittam paṇidhehi, ratim paccanubhossasī-ti.'

'Tāvatimsā-ca Yāmā-ca Tusitā-cāpi devatā,  
Nimmānaratino devā, ye devā Vasavattino :  
Kāma-bandhana-baddhā te, enti Māra-vasam puna.

In reply she says to him :

‘Friend, indeed I do not desire to be reborn anywhere.’

But Māro proceeds to remind her of the delights of the various heavens.

‘Both the Tāvātimsa and the Yāma and also the Tusita deities, the Nimmānarati gods and those gods who are styled Vasavatti (conquering) ; on them fix thy mind ; thou shalt again enjoy pleasure.’

Unmoved, however, by the suggestion, the nun replies :

‘Both the Tāvātimsa and the Yāma and also the Tusita deities, the Nimmānarati gods, and those gods who are styled Vasavatti, they are bound with the bond of desire, they come again into Māro’s power. All the world is on fire, all the world is pouring forth smoke, all the world is ablaze, all the world is shaken through and through. Unshaken, untrembling is the abode of the converted : where Māro cannot come, there does my mind rejoice.’

If the heavenly<sup>1</sup> beings are so very far from happiness,

Sabbo ādipito loko, sabbo loko padhūpito,  
Sabbo pajjalito loko, sabbo loko pakampito :  
Akampitam acalitaṃ aputthujjana-sevitaṃ,  
Agati yattha Mārassa : tattha me nirato mano-ti.’

Samy.-Nikāyo, V., v., § 7 : 2-5.

<sup>1</sup> With reference to the unsatisfactory nature of heavenly joys, Buddha is represented in the Fo-sho-hing-tsan-king (iv., §§ 1440-1444) as saying : ‘My rules are full of grace, able to rescue from destruction (evil ways of birth), and cause a man to ascend to heaven and share in all its pleasures. But yet to seek for these (pleasures) is a great evil, for lustful longing in its increase brings much sorrow. Practise, then, the art of “giving up” all search, for “giving up” desire is the joy of perfect-rest (Nirvāṇa). Know thou that age, disease, and death, these



we can hardly wonder that Buddhism takes a pessimistic view of all earthly joy. This gloomy view is well expressed in the following verses :<sup>1</sup>

‘Never associate with loved or with unloved objects ;  
Not to see the loved and to see the unloved is pain.  
Therefore hold nothing dear, for loss of the loved is evil :  
No bonds have they to whom nothing is loved or unloved.  
From what is loved is born grief, from the loved is born fear ;  
To the man freed from loving anything there is no grief, much less  
‘ fear.

From affection is born grief, from affection is born fear :  
To the man freed from affection there is no grief, much less fear.  
From pleasure is born grief, from pleasure is born fear :  
To the man freed from pleasure there is no grief, much less fear.  
From desire is born grief, from desire is born fear :  
To the man freed from desire there is no grief, much less fear.’

are the great sorrows of the world. Rightly considering the world, we put away birth and old age, disease and death ; (but now) because we see that men at large inherit sorrow caused by age, disease, and death, (we gather that,) when born in heaven, the case is also thus : for there is no continuance there for any, and where there is no continuance there is sorrow, and having sorrow there is no “true self.” ’

<sup>1</sup> Dhammapadam, sll. 210-215 :

‘ Mā piyehi samāgañchi appiyehi kudācanam ;  
Piyān’ adassanam dukkham, appiyānañ-ca dassanam.  
Tasmā piyam na kayirātha, piyāpāyo hi pāpako :  
Ganthā tesam na vijjanti, yesam n’atthi piyāppiyam.  
Piyato jāyatī soko, piyato jāyatī bhayam ;  
Piyato vippamuttassa n’atthi soko kuto bhayam.  
Pemato jāyatī soko, pemato jāyatī bhayam :  
Pemato vippamuttasso n’atthi soko kuto bhayam.  
Ratiyā jāyatī soko, ratiyā jāyatī bhayam :  
Ratiyā vippamuttassa n’atthi soko kuto bhayam.  
Kāmato jāyatī soko, kāmato jāyatī bhayam :  
Kāmato vippamuttassa n’atthi soko kuto bhayam.’





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



Yet certain passages in the Buddhist Scriptures represent this inert and useless life, when the man believes that he has overcome all desires, innocent and sinful alike, as at once calm, peaceful, and even full of joy:

‘Very<sup>1</sup> happily indeed we live free from hate among the hating ;  
 Among men who hate we dwell free from hate.  
 Very happily indeed we live free from sickness among the sick ;  
 Among sick men we dwell free from sickness.  
 Very happily indeed we live inactive among the active ;  
 Among active men we dwell free from activity.  
 Very happily indeed we live to whom there is nothing ;  
 Feeding on enjoyment we shall be like the Radiant gods.’

But it can hardly be said that such a life as this is in any way a noble or a useful one, a life worthy to be lived by any man who has the light which Buddha lacked, and for want of which life for him was so dark that for him the future held naught good but the hope of extinction. For that Buddha is now extinct has never been doubted by his followers. That was what he asserted would happen at his death, for he told men very shortly after attaining Buddhahood that he would not enter on a fresh existence after that life.<sup>2</sup> And the account of his last moments in the Mahāparinibbāna-Suttaṃ, after detailing

<sup>1</sup> ‘Susukhaṃ vata jīvāma verinesu averino ;  
 Verinesu manussesu viharāma averino.  
 Susukhaṃ vata jīvāma āturesu anāturā ;  
 Āturesu manussesu viharāma anāturā.  
 Susukhaṃ vata jīvāma ussukesu anussukā ;  
 Ussukesu manussesu viharāma anussukā.  
 Susukhaṃ vata jīvāma, yesan no n’atthi kiñcanam ;  
 Pitibhakkhā bhavissāma devā ābhassarā yathā.’

Dham., śll. 197-200.

The 200th śloka is found also in the Māra-Samyutto (Samy.-Nik., IV., ii., § 8 : 8). The *kiñcanam* may refer to earthly bonds.

<sup>2</sup> Mahāvaggo, i. 6 : 29 (quoted in Lecture I.).

how he attained to each in turn of the four stages of ecstasy (*jhānam*), ends with the words : ‘ The Worshipful One became extinct.’<sup>1</sup>

Yet before Buddha’s death the question arose whether he would or would not cease to exist after death. On one occasion, we are told, Pasenadi, King of Kosala, came to Khemā, a famous female disciple of Buddha, and inquired of her<sup>2</sup> :

‘ “ How now, lady, does the Tathâgato exist beyond death ? ” ’

‘ “ This, indeed, Great King, has not been clearly stated by the Worshipful One, that the Tathâgato exists beyond death. ” ’

‘ “ What again, lady ? does the Tathâgato not exist beyond death ? ” ’

‘ “ This indeed too, Great King, has not been clearly stated by the Worshipful One, that the Tathâgato does not exist beyond death. ” ’

‘ “ How now, lady ? does the Tathâgato both exist and not exist beyond death ? ” ’

‘ “ Indeed, Great King, this has not been clearly stated by the Worshipful One, ” etc.

<sup>1</sup> ‘ *Bhagavā parinibbāyi* ’ (Mahāparinibbāna-Suttam, p. 62, Childers’ edition).

<sup>2</sup> *Samyutta-Nikāyo*, vol. ii., quoted by Oldenberg (p. 440) :

‘ *Kim nu kho, ayye, hoti Tathāgato param maraṇā ?-ti.* ’

‘ *Abyākatam kho etaṃ, mahārāja, Bhagavatā, hoti Tathāgato param maraṇā-ti.* ’

‘ *Kim pan’, ayye, na hoti Tathāgato param maraṇā ?-ti.* ’

‘ *Etaṃ pi kho, mahārāja, abyākatam Bhagavatā, na hoti Tathāgato param maraṇā-ti.* ’

‘ *Kim nu kho, ayye, hoti-ca na-ca hoti Tathāgato param maraṇā ?-ti.* ’

‘ *Abyākatam kho etaṃ, mahārāja, Bhagavatā. . . .* ’

‘ *Kim pan’, ayye, n’eva hoti na na hoti Tathāgato param maraṇā ?-ti.* ’

‘ *Etaṃ pi kho, mahārāja, abyākatam Bhagavatā.* ’



‘ “ What again, lady ? is the Tathâgato neither existent nor non-existent beyond death ? ” ’

‘ “ This indeed too, Great King, has not been clearly stated by the Worshipful One. ” ’

We see then that, though his disciples naturally clung to the hope that somehow or other their teacher would continue to exist after death, yet this hope could find absolutely nothing<sup>1</sup> in his teaching upon which to build. And yet, not only is the desire for a life after death a part of man's very nature, but anthropological investigations<sup>2</sup> have shown that all nations have instinctively believed, as all nations still do, in the After-life. Even Hindū philosophy, with its denial of the true existence of anything but the Supreme Soul, the *Paramātmā*, into which a man becomes reabsorbed as soon as he can realize the *illusion* (*māyā*) of personal being, still in a measure taught that man existed after death, at least in the same way as a raindrop exists when it has fallen into and been absorbed in the ocean. And even although, as we have seen, Buddha had himself declared that one man cannot bear another man's sins, that each man must eat the fruit of his own doings and can never escape the punishment of his evil deeds, yet the hope that Buddha might continue to exist after death was so natural that (in spite of all that was so clearly implied in his teaching) his disciples

<sup>1</sup> That Buddha does not live after death is taught in the Fo-sho-hing-tsan-king (v., §§ 2036-2038) in these words: ‘ The pains of birth, old age, disease and death, the endless sorrows of the world, the countless miseries of “ hereafter,” dreaded by all the *devas*, he has removed all these accumulated sorrows: say, who would not revere him? — to escape the joys of after-life, this is the world's chief joy ! To add the pains of other births, this is the world's worst sorrow. Buddha, escaped from the pain of birth, shall have no joy of the “ hereafter ” ! ’

<sup>2</sup> See De Quatrefages, ‘ The Human Species. ’





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



or 'Extinction,' is applied primarily<sup>1</sup> to the state of indifference to all things to which the Buddhist attains when he has 'extinguished' the fires of passion and burst the bonds which bind him to existence (so that in this way a man may be said to enter Nirvāṇa during his lifetime), yet, as his physical form (*rūpam*), while it lingers a few more days or years upon earth, is even now decaying, and is of no more account than if it had already perished, his death also is still more frequently spoken of as the attainment of Nirvāṇa. Some texts, indeed, distinguish the two states by using *Nirvāṇa* only as the state into which the *arahat* enters at death, and speaking of him when alive as walking 'near to Nirvāṇa.' In accordance with this, we find Buddha tempted to 'enter Nirvāṇa' immediately after his attaining Buddhahood; and shortly before his death he is said to have spoken in the same way to his disciples, using the expression to imply his own decease. 'Soon,'<sup>2</sup> he says, 'will occur the Tathāgato's attainment of Nirvāṇa (*parinibbānam*); after the lapse of three months hence the Tathāgato will attain Nirvāṇa' (or 'become extinct'). It is clear, therefore, that in whichever sense the word 'Nirvāṇa' is used, Buddha cannot now be said, in the opinion of his disciples, any longer to exist. And this attainment to Nirvāṇa, in this sense as well as in the other, is the goal at which every true Buddhist aims. Few can hope to attain it imme-

<sup>1</sup> Rhys Davids points out that 'Nibbānam' (Nirvāṇa) is properly used of *arahat*-ship, and 'Parinibbānam' of extinction at death (Hibbert Lectures for 1881, p. 161). But Oldenberg ('Buddha,' English translation, p. 445) shows that this distinction, though generally correct, is not always observed.

<sup>2</sup> 'Naciram Tathāgatassa parinibbānam bhavissati, ito tiṇṇam māsānam accayena Tathāgato parinibbāyissatīti' (Mahāparinibbāna Suttam, Childers' edition, p. 37). The very title of this Buddhist work proves the same fact.

diately after this life ; that is reserved only for the most pious members of the Order (Saṅgho)—generally speaking, for the mendicants alone—and only for the very earnest ones even among them. A lay adherent<sup>1</sup> must generally content himself with the lower hope of entering at death into a state of existence somewhat less miserable than that in which he has been living here on earth, a state in which he will be some degrees nearer to Nirvāṇa than he now is. But his ultimate goal and reward, if he toil along the Noble Eightfold Path through this, and perhaps many other lives, whether on earth or in one of the many heavens or hells, is Extinction.

Reserving until our next lecture the explanation of the meaning of the various steps in the Noble Eightfold Path, which sums up the whole of the moral Principles of Buddha's philosophy, we now proceed to inquire what consolation Buddhism offers to the afflicted and sorrowing in a world so full of sorrow and suffering as it represents this world as being.

Generally speaking, Buddhism regards all suffering, disease, and misfortune as the result of ill-doing either in this or in some previous state of existence. This is the popular idea, and innumerable passages confirm it. It is an easy way of explaining, or trying to explain, the patent fact that it is not only those who are wicked that suffer, that often good men are called upon to endure pain, grief, and even apparently undeserved punishment—punishment for sins that they are falsely accused of committing. We know how impossible it is for us to understand these things, and how this problem is dealt with in the Book of Job. Unable to find any satisfactory solution of the problem, men in different lands have been

<sup>1</sup> Yet we are told in the Mahāparinibbāna-Suttaṃ (pp. 16, 17) that in Buddha's own time not a few lay adherents entered Nirvāṇa.



tempted to imagine one or more previous states of existence in which deeds were done and sins committed for which men have to suffer now. Something of the same idea has been supposed by some to have existed in the mind of the Jews in our Lord's time, and to be referred to in St. John's Gospel, where we find the disciples inquiring of Christ,<sup>1</sup> 'Rabbi, who did sin, this man or his parents, that he should be born blind?' The Buddhist solution may seem to many to be an easier and more satisfactory one than most others, for the simple reason that it is difficult to refute, owing to our ignorance. But it tends to produce despair in the sufferer, and to hinder those who accept the doctrine from feeling any pity for such a man, and from endeavouring to relieve or console him. The universality of this explanation among Buddhists in his day is shown by the language of King Milinda (Menander) in the famous Buddhist religious treatise entitled 'Milindapañho,' or 'Menander's Inquiry.'<sup>2</sup> There the King, stating what he believes to be a truth which cannot be disputed, says: 'There is no sensation<sup>3</sup> without *Karma*'—by which he here evidently means sensation of pain and evil-doing in the past; 'all that sensation has *Karma* as its root, just because of *Karma* is it experienced.'

But there is one great difficulty about this doctrine, and this the King states. Buddha himself suffered pain, once when his foot was pierced by a splinter of rock from

<sup>1</sup> 'Παῖβελ, τίς ἥμαρτεν, οὗτος ἢ οἱ γονεῖς αὐτοῦ, ἵνα τυφλὸς γεννηθῇ; (John ix. 2; Nestle, second edition, 1899).

<sup>2</sup> Milindapañho, edited by Trenckner, London, 1880. An English version will be found in vols. xxxv. and xxxvi. of the 'Sacred Books of the East.'

<sup>3</sup> 'N'atthi, bhante, vinā kammaṇa vedayitaṃ; sabban-taṃ vedayitaṃ kammamūlakam, kammam' eva vediyati' (Milindapañho, p. 134).





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



originating in the bile arise . . . . Hence, Sivako, those monks and Brāhmaṇs who thus say and thus think that whatever thing, whether pleasure or pain or neither pleasure nor pain, a person experiences, all of that has as its cause something done previously (in a previous state of existence), both go far beyond what is known spontaneously, and also go far beyond that which is in the world accepted as true. Therefore I say that those monks and Brāhmaṇs are in error.' Buddha then proceeds to point out the eight causes of painful sensations—the bile, the phlegmatic humour, wind, the union of all three, variation of temperature, avoidance of dissimilarity, external action, and, lastly, *Karma*. The result, as stated by Nāgaseno, is that 'it is not all sensations that are produced as the result of *Karma*,<sup>1</sup> and hence Buddha's sufferings are not to be considered as the natural consequences of any evil remaining in him.<sup>2</sup>

In spite, however, both of Buddha's words on the subject, as recorded in their canonical books, and this argument of Nāgaseno, which probably dates from between the years 100 and 200 of our era,<sup>3</sup> there is no doubt that the general theory of affliction still prevalent among Buddhists is that it is the result of evil conduct in a former state of existence.

It may be asked, What consolation did Buddha give to persons who came to him grieving for the death of those whom they held dear? This will be evident from the following narratives.

On one occasion, we are informed,<sup>4</sup> Pasenadi, King of Kosala, came to Buddha grieving for his grandmother

<sup>1</sup> 'Na sabbā vedanā kamma-vipāka-jā' (*ibid.*, p. 138).

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>3</sup> Trenckner, introduction to *Milindapañho*, p. vii.

<sup>4</sup> *Samyutta-Nikāyo*, III., iii., § 2, Ayyakā.

who had just died, having attained the great age of 120 years. ‘Sir,’ says Pasenadi, ‘my<sup>1</sup> grandmother was, moreover, dear and delightful to me.’ In language full of earnestness and sorrow, however quaint it may sound to us, the King assures Buddha that if, at the cost of the loss of his choicest elephant, his best horse, his finest village, or even a whole province, he could have prolonged his grandmother’s life, he would gladly have paid such a price. What was the consolation that Buddha gave him in his sorrow ?

‘All<sup>2</sup> beings, Great King,’ he says, ‘that have not overcome death are liable to death, and have death as their goal.’

Not being able to obtain much consolation from this statement, and perhaps hoping to hear something more to the purpose, Pasenadi replied :

‘Wonderful, Sir ! marvellous, Sir ! how well, Sir, this has been uttered by the Worshipful One ! “All beings that have not overcome death are liable to death, and have death as their goal.”’

<sup>1</sup> ‘Ayyakā kho pana me, bhante, piyā ahosi, manāpā.’

<sup>2</sup> ‘Sabbe sattā, mahārāja, maraṇa-dhammā maraṇa-pariyosānā maraṇam anatītā-ti.

‘Acchariyaṃ, bhante, abbhutaṃ, bhante ; yāva subhāsitaṃ idaṃ, bhante, Bhagavatā : sabbe sattā maraṇa-dhammā maraṇa-pariyosānā maraṇam anatītā-ti.

‘Evam etaṃ, mahārāja, evam etaṃ, mahārāja : sabbe sattā maraṇa-dhammā maraṇa-pariyosānā maraṇam anatītā-ti. Seyyathāpi, mahārāja, yāni kānici kumbhakārika-bhājanāni āmakāni-c’eva pakkāni-ca, sabbāni tāni bhedana-dhammāni bhedana-pariyosānāni bhedanam anatītāni : evam eva kho, mahārāja, sabbe sattā maraṇa-dhammā maraṇa-pariyosānā maraṇam anatītā-ti.

“Sabbe sattā marissantī ; maraṇantaṃ hi jīvitaṃ ;  
Yathā kammaṃ gamissantī, puñña-pāpa-phalūpagā ;  
Nirayaṃ pāpa-kammantā, puñña-kammā-ca suggatiṃ.  
Tasmā kareyya kalyāṇam nicayam samparāyikaṃ ;  
Puññāni paralokasmiṃ patitṭhā honti paṇinan-ti.”’



‘ Even so, Great King—even so, Great King ; all beings that have not overcome death are liable to death, and have death as their goal. For example, Great King, whatever potter’s vessels there may be, both cooked and uncooked, too, all of them, not having overcome breakage, are liable to breakage, and have breakage as their goal ; exactly thus, indeed, Great King, all beings that have not overcome death are liable to death, and have death as their goal.

‘ “ All beings will die, for life ends in death.

According to their deeds shall they go, receiving the fruit of good and evil,

Hell the evil-doers, and the well-doers felicity.

Therefore should one prepare a good store for the future.

In the next world their good deeds are the stay of living beings.’ ”

In ‘ *Buddhaghosha’s Parables*,’ a work translated from the Burmese, there is a most striking and pathetic story which, though it does not occur in any of the canonical or other early Buddhist works, so clearly reveals Buddha’s way of offering consolation to the sorrowing that I cannot refrain from quoting it here, well known as it has become through Sir Edwin Arnold’s poetical version of it in ‘ *The Light of Asia*.’

Kisā-gotamī was a young girl married to a rich man’s only son. ‘ She had one child ;<sup>1</sup> but when the beautiful boy could run alone he died. The young girl in her love for it carried the dead child clasped to her bosom, and went from house to house of her pitying friends, asking them to give her medicine for it. But a Buddhist mendicant, thinking, “ She does not understand,” said to her,

<sup>1</sup> ‘ *Buddhaghosha’s Parables*,’ chapter x., quoted by Professor Rhys Davids in his ‘ *Buddhism* ’ (‘ *Non-Christian Religious Systems* ’) pp. 133, 134. The story is also given in the commentary upon the *Dhammapadam*.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



the sorrowing. Those who from bitter experience know what sorrow is know best how little comfort such words can give. Do they not remind us of the mournful inscriptions on Greek and Roman tombs in the times of dying heathenism in the West, 'Be<sup>1</sup> of good cheer, O Midôn: no one is immortal; even Hercules died.' 'To<sup>2</sup> my dearest, sweetest, most saintly mother: Be of good cheer, mother; no one is immortal'?

We have now dealt very briefly with the leading philosophical doctrines of Buddhism, as taught by Buddha himself and accepted by his earliest disciples. Every man is said to be the creature of his environment, at least to a very great extent, and Buddha was no exception to the rule. Although every one of the doctrines already stated may be found in one or other of the Hindū systems of philosophy so widely current in Buddha's day, yet he cannot be said to have slavishly borrowed from any of them. Every doctrine which he taught has been very considerably modified by him in passing through his mind, so much so that his claim to be a most deep and original thinker cannot be disputed. But while traces of Hindū philosophical speculations are very evident in what we have already learnt of his teaching, yet in the mythology and cosmogony of early Buddhism we shall find the same phenomenon even more clearly evident. That is to say, the mythology and cosmogony of Buddhism are far more plainly derived from those of the Hindūs than is its philosophy. The reason of this is clear. Buddha held and taught that men ought not to

<sup>1</sup> ΕΤΨΤΧΕΙ · ΜΙΔΩΝ · ΟΥΔΕΙΣ · ΑΘΑΝΑΤΟΣ · ΚΑΙ · Ο · ΗΡΑΚΛΗΣ · ΑΠΕΘΑΝΕ (Maffei, 'Mus. Veron.,' p. 268, 11).

<sup>2</sup> MATRI · PIENTISS · DVLCISS · SANCTISSIMÆ · ΟΥΧΙ (lege ΕΤΨΤΧΕΙ?) · ΤΕΚΟΤΣΑ · ΟΥΔΕΙΣ · ΑΘΑΝΑΤΟΣ (Fleetwood, 'Inscriptt. Antiqq.: Sylloge,' p. 275).

waste their time, as he thought, in speculations<sup>1</sup> about the gods, heaven, hell, the after-life; the only thing worth thinking about was the way to escape from the suffering caused by existence. Hence, he did not go out of his way to teach anything to his disciples regarding their relation to the various superhuman beings that everyone in the India of his day believed to exist in the air, in natural objects, the planets, and so forth. These deities and other good and evil spirits could not save a man from the consequence of his own deeds; they were, like man himself (he held), subject to birth and death. Believing that the universe was not created, and knowing nothing of a Creator,<sup>2</sup> deeming himself and the *avahats* far superior to all the gods, no matter of theology seemed to him worthy of much consideration. But not seeing any reason to disbelieve in the existence of superhuman though perishable intelligences, his mind naturally led him to remodel, consciously or unconsciously, what was believed about the *devatās*, in such a way as to fit into his *Weltanschauung*, his manner of looking at things in general, his theory of existence. Hence in the earliest form of Buddhism we find that the Hindū *devas*, while acknow-

<sup>1</sup> Majjhima-Nikāyo, Sabbāsava-Suttaṃ, quoted by Rhys Davids, 'Buddhist Suttas from the Pāli,' pp. 298-300, and also in Hibbert Lectures, pp. 88, 89.

<sup>2</sup> With regard to the existence of a Creator, there is a long disquisition in the Fo-sho-hing-tsan-king (iv., §§ 1455-1468), though it is doubtful whether this is to be attributed to Buddha himself or to Aśvaghoṣa (the author of the Buddha-carita, of which this Chinese work is a translation, though only seventeen chapters out of the twenty-eight are found in Sanskrit). The first and last of these paragraphs run thus: 'He argued not that Îśvara was cause, nor did he advocate some cause heretical, nor yet, again, did he affirm there was no cause for the beginning of the world. . . . Thus, you see, the thought of Îśvara is overthrown in this discussion (*śāstra*), and all such contradictory assertions should be exposed; if not, the blame is ours.'



ledged to exist, have undergone very considerable modification. Instead of being immortal they are mortal. Not being free from the domination<sup>1</sup> of the passions, as even their worshippers acknowledged, they must work out their own deliverance from existence much in the same way as men ought to do. In a word, Buddha represented these invisible beings as very much akin to men, instead of being immeasurably superior to them. His doctrine was preached 'for the sake of, because of, out of pity for both gods and men.' In fact, this part of Buddha's teaching reminds us very strongly of Pindar's view,<sup>2</sup>

Ἐν ἀνδρῶν, ἐν θεῶν γένος· ἐκ μιᾶς δὲ πνέομεν  
ματρὸς ἀμφότεροι· διέλργει δὲ πᾶσα κεκριμένα  
δύναμις,

though Buddha could not have said—to continue the quotation,

ὥς τὸ μὲν οὐδὲν, ὁ δὲ χάλκεος ἀσφαλὲς αἰὲν ἔδος  
μένει οὐρανός,

nor could he have spoken of the gods as ἀθάνατοι, as the Greek poet does immediately after. While endeavouring to exalt men to the condition of at least Epicurean<sup>3</sup> gods,

<sup>1</sup> See, for example, the language used in the Dhajagga-Parittam (Saṃyutta-Nikāyo, XL, i., § 3: 10) about Sakko: 'Sakko hi, bhikkhave, devānaṃ indo, *avītarāgo*, *avītadoso*, *avītamoho*, bhīru, chambhī, utrāsī palāyī-ti.' But in the same passage it is said of Buddha himself: 'Tathāgato hi, bhikkhave, araham, sammā-sambuddho, *vītarāgo*, *vītadoso*, *vītamoho*, abhīru, acchambhī, anutrāsī apalāyī-ti' (§ 3: 17).

<sup>2</sup> Pindar, Nem., vi. 1-4. How different from Buddha's view, on the other hand, was that of Xenophanes (*circa* 560 B.C.):

Ἐἰς Θεός, ἐν τε θεοῖσι καὶ ἀνθρώποισι μέγιστος,  
οὐ τι δέμας θνητοῖσι ὁμοῖος οὐδὲ νόημα.

<sup>3</sup> As depicted in the following passage from Lucretius, if, at least we omit the word 'immortal':

'Omnis enim per se divom natura necesse'st  
Immortali ævo summa cum pace fruatur  
Semota ab nostris rebus seiunctaque longe :





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



Some of the latter class are the guardians of particular families or towns; some reside in the air, in trees, in rocks, in clouds. But above all these are the inhabitants of the heavens, or 'divine worlds.' The heavens are divided into two classes, the lower six being called *devalokos*, and the twenty higher celestial regions the *Brahmalokos*. The lowest of these, the 'Heaven of the Four Great Kings,'<sup>1</sup> is situated at a vast height above the four great islands which are supposed to form this lower world. It is ruled over by four spirits, called the Four Mahārājas or Great Kings, who are the guardians of our world (*lokapālos*). They are the gods of the four cardinal points. The second heaven is called that of the Thirty-Three Gods,<sup>2</sup> of whom Sakko or Indra is the chief. It is situated on the top of Mount Meru. The third heaven is that of the *Yāmo* gods; the fourth is known as the *Tusita* heaven; the fifth is that of the *Nimmānarati* deities; and the sixth is styled the *Paranimmita-vasa-vatti* heaven. Its ruler is Māro, whose name signifies Death, and who shares with Sakko the government of the whole of these six heavens, which are collectively styled the 'Heaven of Sensual Pleasures,'<sup>3</sup> because such pleasures are indulged in throughout these six heavens as well as in this 'World of Men,'<sup>4</sup> in the World of *Asuras* or evil spirits, the Ghost-World,<sup>5</sup> the 'Animal-World,'<sup>6</sup> and Nirayo or Hell. Māro is a thoroughly evil being, and delights to lead men astray. He has three daughters, Taṇhā, Rati, and Arati, or Thirst, Sensuality, and Abstinence, and is assisted by a host of *devas*, inhabitants of the sixth heaven. The realm over which Māro rules (*Māra-dheyyam*) includes 'the whole sphere of sentient exis-

<sup>1</sup> Catum-mahārājako Devaloko.

<sup>2</sup> Tāvātimsa-devaloko.

<sup>3</sup> Kāmā-vacāra-devaloko.

<sup>4</sup> Manussa-loko.

<sup>5</sup> Peta-loko.

<sup>6</sup> Tiracchāna-yoni.

tence,'<sup>1</sup> since wherever there is existence there is change, birth, and death.

The twenty *Brahmalokos* are subdivided into sixteen 'corporeal' and four 'incorporeal'<sup>2</sup> heavens, situated one above another, and each inhabited by a particular class of superhuman beings styled *Brahmās*. These are superior to the dwellers in the *devalokos* or lower heavens, inasmuch as they are free from the dominion of *Kāmo*, or sensual desire, and do not feel either heat or cold. Those who belong to the 'corporeal' *Brahmā*-worlds have forms or bodies, but the rest are devoid of form, and consist of effulgence only. The ruler of the whole of the *Brahmā*-worlds is *Brahmā*, or *Mahābrahmā* (the Great *Brahmā*). We thus see something like one of the *Hindū* triads ruling the superhuman or divine region of the Buddhist faith, *Sakko*, *Māro*, and *Brahmā*, of whom two are identical with two of the *Hindū* gods (*Sakko* being *Pālī* for *Śākva*, one of *Indra*'s names in *Sanskṛit*) in name. But in nature they have changed greatly from the *Hindū* conception of them. Being liable to transmigration, change, decay and death, they can lay claim to no permanence. The being who in *Buddha*'s day was *Mahābrahmā* had, we are told,<sup>3</sup> at one time been a monk called *Sahako*, who, in the time of a previous *Buddha* named *Kassapo*, had by his merits raised himself to that position. *Gotamo Buddha* himself had in previous births attained to that dignity no fewer than four times.<sup>4</sup> The *Sakko* of *Buddha*'s time had once been a young *Brāhmaṇ* named *Magho*,<sup>5</sup> and it is to this that reference is made in

<sup>1</sup> Childers' *Pālī Dictionary*, s.v. *Māro*.

<sup>2</sup> *Kūpa-brahma-lokos* and *A-rūpa-brahma-lokos*.

<sup>3</sup> A Buddhist commentary to this effect is quoted by Childers s.v. *Mahābrahmā*.

<sup>4</sup> Hardy, 'Manual of Buddhism,' p. 100.

<sup>5</sup> Childers' *Dictionary*, p. 419.



the thirtieth *śloka* of the Dhammapadam, quoted above.<sup>1</sup> Gotamo Buddha himself had in twenty previous existences occupied that position.<sup>2</sup>

The Buddhist hells are very numerous, numbering in all 136,<sup>3</sup> of which eight principal ones are frequently mentioned. Each of these 'is a place of torment in which former sins are expiated, but it is but a temporary state, and may be immediately followed by rebirth in a blissful existence — *e.g.*, in one of the higher *devalokos*.'<sup>4</sup>

The cosmogony and geography of the Buddhist are very marvellous. The universe consists of a vast, and perhaps infinite, number of enormous circular planes,<sup>5</sup> so arranged that they form groups of three, touching each other, the space between being a hell. A sun and a moon are attached to each. A mountain called Meru rises in the centre of each of these planes to the height of 84,000 *yojanas*<sup>6</sup> or stages above the ocean. There are four great islands (*mahādīpos*) in each of these planes. One such plane is our earth. Of the marvellous rivers, lakes, trees, and animals found even in the Himālaya mountains full accounts are given in various commentaries, and the student will find them described by Hardy in his 'Manual of Buddhism,'<sup>7</sup> and in his smaller work entitled 'Legends of the Buddhists.'<sup>8</sup>

As a specimen of the absurdities concerning such matters contained even in the older Pāli books, we select

<sup>1</sup> *Supra*, p. 109.

<sup>2</sup> Hardy, *op. cit.*, p. 100.

<sup>3</sup> Hardy, quoted in Childers, *op. cit.*, p. 260.

<sup>4</sup> Childers, p. 260.

<sup>5</sup> Each called a *Cakkavālam* (Sanskrit *Cakravādam*).

<sup>6</sup> The value of the *yojana* is not yet accurately known, but Dr. Hoey sees good reason to estimate it at between  $4\frac{1}{2}$  and  $4\frac{5}{8}$  miles. The latter calculation would make it equal to two Nepalese *kōs*.

<sup>7</sup> Chapter i.

<sup>8</sup> Chapter ii., pp. 80-141.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



addressed the demon-chief Rāhu as he stood to one side with the verse :

“ Why now, as if utterly terrified, Rāhu, hast thou released the sun ?  
Having come with excited aspect, why dost thou stand frightened ? ”

(Rāhu replied :)

“ My head would have split into seven pieces, alive I should have  
obtained no pleasure,  
(I have been addressed in verse by Buddha), had I not released  
the sun. ” ’

It is not necessary to mention such absurdities more in detail, but it is well to remember them for two reasons. The first is because it is from such mythology as that which we have briefly considered that many of the later corruptions of Buddhism have sprung. The second reason is because a false but specious ‘ liberality ’ of thought leads many persons to exalt Buddhism far above its deserts, and even to speak of it as ‘ in accord with Nature and her laws. ’<sup>1</sup> While giving all due credit to Buddha for devoting his life to teaching what he believed to be most necessary for his fellow-creatures to know, ‘ out of pity for the world, ’ and while acknowledging all that is original in his philosophical speculations, it is hardly honest to conceal all the many and great defects and errors in his teaching. Surely, in dealing with Buddhism, as with everything else, we should ‘ Nothing extenuate and naught set down in malice. ’ Perfect fairness is best, in this as in all things ; and this is especially

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Subhadra Bhikschu, ‘ Buddhistischer Katechismus, ’ p. vi, where that writer speaks of Buddhism as ‘ Eine Lehre, welche frei von Dogmen und Formenwesen, im Einklang mit der Natur und ihren Gesetzen, die höchsten, Geist und Herz gleichermassen befriedigenden Wahrheiten in so einfachem Gewande enthält, dass sie selbst dem bescheidenen Verstande fassbar sind, ’ etc.

befitting for us Christians, remembering whose followers we are. Augustine's wise words of advice are as worthy of being remembered to-day as they were in his own time :

‘ Whosoever<sup>1</sup> is a good and true Christian, let him understand that Truth, wheresoever he may have found it, belongs to his Lord.’

<sup>1</sup> ‘ Quisquis bonus verusque Christianus est, Domini sui esse intellegat, ubicumque invenerit, Veritatem ’ (Aug., ‘ De Doct. Christiana,’ lib. ii., 18).



# LECTURE III

## BUDDHA'S MORAL TEACHING

'Na antalikkhe, na samudda-majjhe,  
Na pabbatānaṃ vivaraṃ pavissa  
Na vijjatī so jagatippadeso  
Yatthaṭṭhito muñceyya pāpakammā.'<sup>1</sup>

Dhammapadam, śl. 127.

**I**N order to form a just estimate of the Moral System of Buddhism, and to understand how virtues and vices are distinguished from one another, and their relative degrees of merit or demerit fixed, it is necessary to remember from what point of view the Buddhist looks at all matters of conduct. If for the moment we take our stand on the same level, we may, perhaps, be able to see how it is that he classes as evil deeds certain actions which in themselves are indifferent, or even good, and how it is that he seems to fail in any adequate degree to realize what Sin is.

All things, moral conduct included, are necessarily regarded by a Buddhist from a very low, an essentially selfish standpoint. Acknowledging no Divine Creator or Judge, not even a 'Power not ourselves that makes for righteousness,' he has no perception of anything

<sup>1</sup> These verses, as twice quoted in the Milindapañho (Trenckner's edition, pp. 150, 151), have, instead of *pāpakammā*, the word *Maccupāsā* 'from the snare of death.'





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



by his defective outlook on the world that it prevents his conscience from guiding him aright. While, therefore, we find much that is noble in the Moral Precepts of Buddha, much, on the other hand, at once strikes us as defective, and even wrong. Those duties which are incumbent upon the Buddhist are so because, and only because, their performance assists him in attaining Nirvāṇa ultimately. Things which are forbidden are so, not because they are wrong in themselves, but simply because they tend to produce evil consequences to himself primarily. They should also be avoided because they tend to hinder other beings from attaining Nirvāṇa. The foundation, therefore, of the whole moral system of Buddhism is found in the Four Noble Truths<sup>1</sup> of Suffering, the Cause of Suffering, the Cessation of Suffering, and the Path which leads to the Cessation of Suffering, and we have already dealt with these 'Truths' in our first lecture.

The moral system of early and genuine Buddhism consisted of three great divisions. 'There<sup>2</sup> was a system of lower morality intended for those who still wished to remain in the world. There was a second system, including the lower but going beyond it, for those who had entered the Order. And there was a third and highest, including both the others, but going again beyond them,

---

*est quærendus explanator aut interpres eius alius. Nec erit alia lex Romæ, alia Athenis, alia nunc, alia posthac; sed et omnes gentes et omni tempore una lex et sempiterna et immutabilis continebit; unusque erit communis quasi magister et imperator omnium Deus, ille legis huius inventor, disceptator, lator; cui qui non parebit, ipse se fugiet, ac naturam hominis aspernatus hoc ipso luet maximas pœnas, etiam si cætera supplicia, quæ putantur, effugerit'* (Cicero, 'De Republica,' lib. iii.; quoted by Lactantius, 'De div. Instt.,' lib. vi.,

<sup>1</sup> Lecture I., pp. 30-32.

<sup>2</sup> Rhys Davids' Hibbert Lectures, pp. 205, 206.

for those who had entered what is called the '*Āriyo Atthaṅgiko Maggo*,' the 'Noble Eightfold Path'—that is to say, the system of intellectual and moral self-culture and self-control which culminated in *Ārahant*-ship. What we understand by morality is almost confined to the lowest of the three. The desirability of abandoning the world, the consequences of having done so, the pursuits with which the recluse should or should not occupy himself, are considered in the second. Even this second system, much stricter than the first, is called 'a mere trifle, only a lower thing,'<sup>1</sup> as compared with the insight and freedom of the *Ārahant*; and the disciple is not to be satisfied with having attained to the lesser aim. The third consists, on the *positive* side, of the Seven Jewels of the Law, enumerated in the 'Book of the Great Decease';<sup>2</sup> and, on the *negative*, of the veils and hindrances which the earnest Buddhist has to break, to remove, and to overcome.'

Dealing in the first place with the first of these three divisions, the duties of the lay adherent of either sex, it may be well to quote what have been called the 'Buddhist Beatitudes.'<sup>3</sup> They are contained in a chapter of

<sup>1</sup> *Brahmajāla-Suttaṃ*, i., § 10.

<sup>2</sup> *Mahāparinibbāna-Suttaṃ*, i., § 7, pp. 6 and 7. The 'Seven Jewels of the Law' are the seven 'Constituents of Perfect Knowledge,' or 'Perfect Buddhahood' (*sambojjhaṅgo*), which are the following, as given in this passage: 'Recollection, investigation, energy, joy, calm, contemplation, and equanimity' — 'Sati-sambojjhaṅgo, dhammavicaya-s., viriya-s., pīti-s., passaddhi-s., samādhi-s., upekkhā-s.'

<sup>3</sup> A very good specimen of the loose way of using words which has deceived Seydel and others into fancying that a great resemblance between Buddhism and the Gospels could be traced. The word *mangalam* means 'a boon,' as is clear from the context in the nymph's question; but it is a boon not bestowed by anyone, the best thing to be desired.



the ‘Khuddaka-pāṭho,’ or ‘Little Path,’ entitled ‘Chapter of the Great Boon,’<sup>1</sup> which runs in the following way :

‘ Thus has it been heard by me. Once upon a time the Worshipful One is dwelling at Sāvattṭhi in the Jeta-grove, in Anāthapiṇḍiko’s park. Then indeed a certain nymph of beautiful form on a lovely night, illuminating the whole Jeta-grove, approached the spot where the Worshipful One was. Having approached and respectfully saluted the Worshipful One, she stood to one side. Standing indeed to one side that nymph addressed the Worshipful One with the verse :

‘ “ Many gods and men have thought about boons,  
Desiring prosperity : mention the best boon.” ’

The text then gives Buddha’s reply in eleven stanzas :

‘ Both not to serve fools and to serve the wise (learned),  
And reverence for the venerable : this is the best boon.

‘ Both to dwell in a favoured land and meritorious conduct in a  
former state,  
And a perfect aspiration for one’s self : this is the best boon.

‘ Both much learning<sup>2</sup> and skill and discipline well mastered,  
And the word which is well-spoken : this is the best boon.

‘ Attendance on mother and father, cherishing of child and wife,  
And an untroubled calling :<sup>3</sup> this is the best boon.

‘ Both almsgiving and a religious walk and the cherishing of  
relatives,  
And blameless deeds : this is the best boon.

<sup>1</sup> Mahāmaṅgala-Suttaṃ. Our translation is from this chapter as it is given in the ‘Parittamaṃ.’

<sup>2</sup> This, according to Buddhaghosa’s commentary, means learning the Three Piṭakas by heart.

<sup>3</sup> This explanation of the words ‘an untroubled occupation’ (*anākulā kammantā*) is taken from Childers’ Dictionary (*s.v.* Kammanto).





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



munity were bound to be monks, cut off from all family ties and worldly duties.

The Dhammapadam contains a large number of verses collected from various other books of the Pāli Canon, and some of these, too, depict the virtues which should be practised by pious laymen. We proceed to quote a few of the most striking of them :

‘ If one either speaks or acts with a corrupt mind,  
Thereafter suffering follows him as the wheel does the foot of the  
(ox) that draws it. . . .

If one either speaks or acts with a serene mind,  
Thereafter pleasure follows him like a shadow that departs not.

“ He abused me, he smote me, he overcame me, he robbed me,”  
Those who harbour that (thought), their wrath is not appeased.

“ He abused me, he smote me, he overcame me, he robbed me,”  
Those who harbour not that (thought), their wrath is thoroughly  
appeased.

For never is wrath here appeased with wrath,  
And by freedom from wrath it is appeased : this is a permanent law.’<sup>1</sup>

‘ The man who continues to view pleasant things, not restraining  
his senses,  
And being immoderate in food, indolent, weak,  
Him verily Māro vanquishes as the wind a feeble tree.

The man who continues to view unpleasant things, well restraining  
his senses,  
And moderate in food, faithful, exerting his strength,  
Him verily Māro vanquishes not, as the wind a rocky mountain.’<sup>2</sup>

‘ Not other men’s faults, not other men’s doings and omissions,  
Should one observe, but his own doings and omissions.’<sup>3</sup>

‘ Like a bright, fair-coloured flower without scent,  
So the well-spoken word of one who acts not is fruitless.  
Like a bright, fair-coloured flower with scent,  
So the well-spoken word of one who acts is fruitful.’<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dham., sll. 1-5.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, sl. 50.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, sll. 7, 8.

<sup>4</sup> *Op. cit.*, sll. 51, 52.

‘ Long is the night to the watcher, long is the stage to the weary,  
Long is the transmigration of fools, not understanding the true Law.’<sup>1</sup>

‘ The drinker in of the Law lies down happily with serene mind ;  
The wise man always rejoices in the Law proclaimed by the noble.

For conduit-makers guide the water,  
Fletchers bend the arrow,  
Carpenters bend the tree,  
Wise men tame themselves.’<sup>2</sup>

‘ If a man has done evil, let him not do it again and again,  
Let him not find pleasure therein : painful is the accumulating of  
evil.

If a man has done good, let him do it again and again,  
Let him find pleasure therein : joyful is the accumulating of good.’<sup>3</sup>

‘ Whoever injures an uncorrupt man,  
A person pure, undefiled,  
The ill comes back to that very fool  
Like fine dust thrown against the wind.’<sup>4</sup>

‘ Wicked deeds are easy, and harmful to one’s self ;  
What verily is both harmless and good, verily that is extremely  
difficult.’<sup>5</sup>

‘ He who being formerly indifferent, afterwards is not indifferent,  
He illumines this world like the moon freed from a cloud.

He whose evil deed done is covered by a good one,  
He illumines this world like the moon freed from a cloud.’<sup>6</sup>

‘ Let one conquer anger by mildness, let one conquer wickedness  
with goodness,  
Let him conquer the miser with a gift, the false speaker with the  
truth.’<sup>7</sup>

‘ Afar off shine the good like the Himālaya mountain ;  
The wicked are not perceived here, as arrows shot by night.’<sup>8</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dham., sl. 60.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, sl. 117, 118.

<sup>5</sup> *Op. cit.*, sl. 163.

<sup>7</sup> *Op. cit.*, sl. 223. Cf. ‘ Be not overcome of evil,’ etc. (Rom. xii. 21).

<sup>8</sup> *Op. cit.*, sl. 304.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, sl. 79, 80.

<sup>4</sup> *Op. cit.*, sl. 125.

<sup>6</sup> *Op. cit.*, sl. 172, 173.



Besides such proverbial<sup>1</sup> philosophy and such precepts as these, which may be said to be profitable for all men alike, we find in the Dhammapadam others which state what the members of the Mendicant Community should do and what they should leave undone. With these we are not concerned for the present. But it may be well to notice the confusion between comparatively innocent and very wicked deeds, as evidenced by their being classed together, which exists in the Buddhist mind. For example, we read :

‘ All fear the rod, all dread death ;  
Taking one’s self as an instance (of this), let one not kill nor cause to kill.

All fear the rod, to all is life dear ;  
Taking one’s self as an instance (of this), let one not kill nor cause to kill.

Whoso harms with a rod beings desirous of pleasure,  
Though longing for pleasure for himself, hereafter he does not obtain pleasure.

Whoso hurts not with a rod beings desirous of pleasure,  
Though longing for pleasure for himself, he hereafter obtains pleasure.’<sup>2</sup>

And again :

‘ Whoso destroys life and speaks falsehood,  
Takes in the world what is not given, and approaches another’s wife,  
And the man who addicts himself to drinking intoxicants,  
This man even here in the world digs up his own root.’<sup>3</sup>

Here we find that the act of putting to death any living creature, for whatever reason, is coupled with very heinous sins. The reason of this is because, in accord-

<sup>1</sup> The resemblance between the general style of such maxims as these and the ‘ *Proverbial Philosophy* ’ of Martin Tupper will readily be perceived. Of course, the reader will also notice a great difference, inasmuch as Martin Tupper’s whole book is pervaded with a deep religious feeling, and this is altogether lacking in all Buddhist works.

<sup>2</sup> Dham., şll. 129-132.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, şll. 246, 247.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



If in village or forest what is other people's property  
 One by theft takes ungiven, him know to be an outcast.  
 Whoso indeed, having received a loan, flees when addressed,  
 Saying, "No, for I owe thee naught": him know to be an outcast.  
 Verily whoso, through greediness for a trifle a person walking on the  
 road

Having slain, takes the trifle: him know to be an outcast.  
 What man soever, for his own sake, for another's sake, and for  
 wrath,

Being questioned as a witness, lies: him know to be an outcast.

Whoso has to do with the wives of relatives or friends,  
 By force or by mutual consent: him know to be an outcast.

Whoso mother or father or aged person whose youth has gone  
 Well-content does not support: him know to be an outcast.

Whoso mother or father or brother or sister

Or mother-in-law strikes or annoys: him know to be an outcast.

Whoso, being asked for good, teaches evil,

Consults with a concealer: him know to be an outcast.

Whoso, having done an evil deed, wishes not to be known,

He is the doer of a hidden thing: him know to be an outcast.

Whoso, having gone to another man's house, having eaten good food,  
 Does not in return honour him when he comes: him know to be  
 an outcast.

Whoso either a Brāhmaṇ or a monk or any other mendicant

Deceives by false speaking: him know to be an outcast.

Whoso either a Brāhmaṇ or a monk, when meal-time is at hand,

Annoys by voice and does not give anything: him know to be an  
 outcast.

Whoso here proclaims the unreal, being enveloped in infatuation,  
 Coveting a trifle: him know to be an outcast.

Whoso both exalts himself and despises another,

Being vile through his arrogance: him know to be an outcast.

Whoso is wrathful and ignoble, ill-wishing, envious, evil,

Shameless, sinning without fear: him know to be an outcast.

Whoso reviles a Buddha or even his disciple,

A mendicant or a householder: him know to be an outcast.

Verily whoso being imperfect pretends to be a perfect man (*arahat*),

This thief indeed, though in the Brahmā-world, is the vilest outcast.

These indeed who have been mentioned to you are by me called  
 outcasts.



Not by birth does one become a Brāhmaṇ, not by birth does one become an outcast :

By conduct one becomes a Brāhmaṇ, by conduct one becomes an outcast.<sup>1</sup>

Buddha then related the tale of a *Caṇḍālo* named Sopāko Mātāṅgo, who, he said, it is well known attained to the Brahmā-world<sup>2</sup> through subduing his passions. Convinced by Buddha's wise words, the Brāhmaṇ apologized for his rudeness, and desired to be admitted to the rank of a lay adherent.<sup>3</sup>

Very much the same teaching, sometimes in the same words, is given by Buddha in the Parābhava-Suttaṃ, or 'Chapter about Loss,' to a company of *devas* who came one day to ask him for instruction as to what evil things to avoid, lest they should suffer loss. There he condemns fraudulent dealing, drunkenness, unchastity, gambling, jealousy, pride, idleness, want of energy, undutiful conduct to parents, and many other forms of misconduct.

The 'Ten Moral Precepts' of the Buddhist faith are divided into three sections. The first five of these precepts are binding upon lay adherents, who are not obliged to obey the remainder ; but they are recommended to practise the first eight. The last two are intended to apply only to full members of the Order, though every catechumen or novice who desires to obtain admission to the Order of Mendicants takes a vow to obey the whole ten. They are the following :

1. Abstinence from slaying any living being.
2. Abstinence from taking what is not given.
3. Abstinence from conduct unbecoming a religious student.
4. Abstinence from speaking falsely.

<sup>1</sup> Vasala-Suttaṃ, śll. 1-21.

<sup>2</sup> *Loc. cit.*, śll. 22-27.

<sup>3</sup> *Loc. cit.*, § 7.



5. Abstinence from intoxicants, which cause slothfulness.

6. Abstinence from eating out of due season.

7. Abstinence from dancing, songs, music, and seeing spectacles.

8. Abstinence from using as adornments garlands, scents, unguents, ornaments, and finery.

9. Abstinence from (sleeping in) a high bed, a big bed.

10. Abstinence from receiving gold and silver.<sup>1</sup>

The third of these precepts is held to forbid unchaste conduct of any sort, while a member of the Order has to live as a celibate. But the Mahāvaggo speaks of bestiality<sup>2</sup> as far less sinful than the conduct of a mendicant who returns to his family, thus showing how terribly perverted the moral sense becomes in a system of philosophy or religion which does not recognise a God. The fifth precept mentions three particular kinds of intoxicants which it is rather difficult to identify at present; their use is prohibited on the ground that they make a man slothful and careless in the observance of the rules of the Order. By the sixth rule the eating of food after the mid-day meal is prohibited.<sup>3</sup> The tenth rule compels the Buddhist monk to renounce the pos-

<sup>1</sup> Dasa-sikkhā-padāni; Mahāvaggo, i., cap. lvi.; Vin., i. 83, 84: 'Pāṇātipātā veramaṇī, adinnādānā veramaṇī, abrahmacariyā veramaṇī, musāvādā veramaṇī, surāmerayamajjapamādaṭṭhānā veramaṇī, vikālabhojanā veramaṇī, naccagītavāditavisūkadassanā veramaṇī, mālā-gandhavilepanadhāraṇamaṇḍanavibhūsanatṭhānā veramaṇī, uccāsayanamahāsayanā veramaṇī, jātarūparajatapaṭiggahaṇā veramaṇī.'

<sup>2</sup> Mahāvaggo, i., cap. lxxviii., § 2: 'Antamaso tiracchānagatāya.'

<sup>3</sup> But the mendicants are permitted to eat four kinds of sweet food after mid-day. These are called *navanītaṃ*, *madhu*, *phāṇītaṃ*, *telam* (butter, honey, raw sugar, and oil made from the seeds of the *Sesamum Indicum*). See commentary in Fausböll's Dhammapadam, edition of 1855.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



or fasting-day, is one which occurs four times a month, and the observance of it is acknowledged to have been devised by Buddha from certain Hindū monks of the Titthiya<sup>1</sup> school. Buddha himself seems to have wished the recitation of the Pātimokkham to take place only on the fourteenth or fifteenth day of the half-month,<sup>2</sup> but it is now read in the monasteries on the eighth day of each half-month as well.<sup>3</sup>

It will be noticed that, as the strict Buddhist does not acknowledge any Creator and knows no God whom he is bound to worship, there is no precept in the slightest degree resembling the first four commandments of the Mosaic Code. The fifth commandment of the Mosaic Code is also absent from the ten Moral Precepts of the Buddhists, but we have seen that it is practically acknowledged in the Vasala-Suttam and elsewhere as binding upon all men. Yet transgression of any of these precepts, great or small, is not in any way regarded as a moral offence. It is evil, in the first place, because it injures the committer of the deed by entailing evil consequences in this or in some other existence, and still more because it tends to prevent him from reaching the goal at which he aims—Nirvāṇa. In the second place, it is evil because it violates one's duty to one's fellow-beings. Even an offence against a woman's honour is condemned principally on the ground that she is the property of someone else. We see, therefore, that Buddhist morality is defective in many ways. The idea of sin is practically absent, as has been pointed out in a previous lecture, its place being taken by that of *defilement* (*āsavo*), or *passion* (*kilēso*). To speak, as some do,<sup>4</sup> of the 'four

<sup>1</sup> Mahāvaggo, ii., cap. i.

<sup>2</sup> *Loc. cit.*, ii., cap. iv., § 2.

<sup>3</sup> Childers' Dictionary, s.v. Uposatho.

<sup>4</sup> E.g. Dickson in his translation of the Pātimokkham.



deadly sins '<sup>1</sup> prohibited by Buddha is to apply to Buddhistic conceptions words altogether inappropriate, and calculated to convey entirely false ideas. In fact, in writing on the subject of Buddhism, one of the greatest difficulties is to avoid giving altogether wrong ideas about that system of philosophy through the use of terms which in English, and in most other European languages, have, as it were, been *baptized*, and have become so thoroughly associated with Christian ideas that they are certain to mislead the student if used at all. We are therefore compelled to abstain as much as possible from the use of such terms as 'sin,' 'guilt,' 'punishment,' 'reward,' 'duty,' 'holiness,' 'righteousness,' 'creation,' 'creature,' and many others; and the fact that many writers have freely used these terms has entirely misled many sciologists of our own age.

The *defilements* or *āsavos* are sometimes spoken of as three—*kāmāsavō*,<sup>2</sup> the defilement of lust; *bhavāsavō*, the defilement of the love of existence; and *avijjāsavō*, the defilement of ignorance. The latter denotes only the 'ignorance' which consists in not knowing the 'Four Noble Truths,' no other kind of knowledge being considered by the Buddhist as of any real value. A fourth *defilement* is often mentioned, *diṭṭhāsavō*, or the defilement of heresy. There are ten evil *passions* (*kilesos*)—to wit, greed, hatred, infatuation, pride, heresy, doubt, sloth, vanity, shamelessness, absence of fear of doing wrong.<sup>3</sup> These should be avoided by the true disciple of Buddha.

It will be observed that all the precepts which we

<sup>1</sup> *Loc. cit.*, p. 39.

<sup>2</sup> Childers, *s.v.* *Āsavo*. Buddha mentions the *four āsavos* in Mahā-parinibbāna-Suttaṃ, p. 8.

<sup>3</sup> *Loc. cit.*, *s.v.* *Kilesos*. These are, in Pālī, lobho, doso, moho, māno, diṭṭhi, vicikicchā, thīnaṃ, uddhaccam ahiṛikā, and anottappam.



have hitherto noticed are *negative* in their character. Doubtless the more earnest members of the Order would at times feel that the prohibition of one particular action, or line of conduct, indirectly enjoined its opposite ; yet the command to do good is hardly ever expressed. An exception to this, in some measure, is found in the *Metta-Suttam*, or ‘Chapter on Benevolence,’ in which Buddha tells his disciples what eleven advantages a man may expect from entertaining a feeling of friendship or universal benevolence. A man who does this, he says, ‘sleeps<sup>1</sup> happily, awakens happily, sees not an evil dream, is dear to men, is dear to superhuman beings, the deities protect him, neither fire nor poison nor weapon approaches him, his mind speedily becomes tranquillized, the look on his face becomes calm, unperplexed he dies, without acquiring anything further he attains to the Brahmā-world.’ Here, too, as we have already seen, one is recommended to entertain benevolent feelings (not to *practise beneficence*) from no higher motive than self-interest.

In the *Kavaniya-Metta-Suttam*,<sup>2</sup> or ‘Chapter on the Propriety of showing Benevolence,’ we find some noble sentiments. That Suttam urges the man who seeks his own true good to be ‘able, upright, really upright and compliant, gentle, not vainglorious, both contented and frugal and free from care, living on simple food, keeping his senses in subjection, prudent, modest, not greedy in the families’ (from which he begs). It then proceeds thus :

‘Nor let him practise aught base  
With which the wise yonder might reproach him ;  
Happy or secure let them be,  
Let all beings become happy-souled.

---

<sup>1</sup> Metta-Suttam.

<sup>2</sup> Part of the Khuddaka-Nikāyo.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



reached the end of his journey, and is never to be reborn in this or in any other world. The Buddhist mendicant reaches four different stages as he journeys along this road, and during the journey he has to burst the Ten Fetters (*saṃyojanos*) that bind him to existence. These Ten Fetters are—the Heresy of Individuality, Doubt, Contact with Rites, Sensual Pleasure, Hatred, Attachment to Form, Attachment to Formlessness, Arrogance, Vanity, Ignorance.<sup>1</sup> These need some elucidation.

The first Fetter, the ‘Heresy of Individuality,’ is belief in the existence of the Ego. A human being is said to be a compound, made up of the five elements of existence (*Khandho*), or Form,<sup>2</sup> Sensation, Perception, the Functions (or Aggregations), and Consciousness. As all compounds perish, he at death ceases to exist, though his *Karma* (as already explained)<sup>3</sup> passes on to a new being produced by his longing for existence. As these five elements of existence do not include a spirit, man has no real personality, and he has at the very threshold of his religious life as a Buddhist to strive to overcome his belief in his own individuality. Thus we see that it is impossible for a Buddhist, while he continues such, to believe in the immortality of the spirit, for he has to learn, as the very first step in the Noble Eightfold Path, that he has no spirit, no personality. One is sometimes inclined to wonder how Buddha himself would have taken

<sup>1</sup> Sakkāya-diṭṭhi, vicikicchā, sīlabbata-pārāmāso, kāmarāgo, paṭigho, rūpa-rāgo, arūpa-rāgo, māno, uddhaccam, avijjā (Childers, s.v. Saṃyojanam).

<sup>2</sup> See this argued out in the Milindapañho (Trenckner's edition of Pālī Text, pp. 25-28, book ii., cap. i.). There, too (p. 26), the thirty-two constituent parts of the body, as in the Parittam (Dvattiṃsa-kāram), are mentioned. Man is compared to a chariot, made up of a certain number of parts, yet the chariot has no personality.

<sup>3</sup> Lecture II., pp. 87, 88.



the Cartesian proof of the reality of the Self—‘Cogito, ergo sum.’

The second Fetter, or ‘Doubt,’ means doubt about the truth of the Buddhistic philosophy. It was certainly wise to forbid doubt on this point, for it is evident that the only way in which it is possible to accept that teaching at all is by receiving it, in opposition to reason, on the authority of the ‘Teacher.’<sup>1</sup>

The third Fetter, or ‘Contact with Rites,’ is said properly to signify devotion to ‘certain<sup>2</sup> ascetic austerities, in which the anchorite imitates the manners and habits of a dog, ox, or other animal.’ But in the so-called ‘Jewel Chapter’ (Ratana-Suttam) of the Khuddaka-Nikāyo we find that ‘rites’<sup>3</sup> in general are condemned. This, no doubt, means sacrifices and religious ceremonies, including worship. The Buddhist faith leaves no ground for worship, for the true God is not recognised, while the *devas* and other superhuman beings, whether evil like Māro or good, are bound with the chain of suffering as men are, and it is expressly stated that each man must work out his own deliverance, ‘being his own Lamp, his own Refuge, having no other Refuge.’<sup>4</sup>

The fourth and fifth Fetters need no explanation, but their mention here shows how immoral desires and evil passions are regarded by the Buddhist, as to be avoided solely because they hinder a man from progressing towards the attainment of Nirvāṇa.

The sixth and seventh Fetters condemn desire for continued existence in this world, and the longing for exist-

<sup>1</sup> Satthā, one of the titles frequently given to Buddha in the Pāli canonical books.

<sup>2</sup> Childers, *s.v.* Sīlabbatam, and the Buddhist explanation there given.

<sup>3</sup> Quoted below, p. 143.

<sup>4</sup> Lecture I., p. 57.



ence, whether in the *devalokos* or in the higher heavens, where there is no form. Death, Buddha declares,<sup>1</sup> is feared by all beings alike ; yet he forbids us to love life, even in a higher world. This shows how hopelessly his philosophy is opposed to the very nature of things.<sup>2</sup>

The only other Fetter that calls for notice is the tenth. 'Ignorance,' as we have already said, implies only ignorance of the 'Four Noble Truths.' 'It would be an utter mistake,' says Bishop Copleston,<sup>3</sup> 'to think of Buddhism as addressed chiefly to the intellect, or as concerned with the promotion of learning. Its adherents are not required to furnish themselves with even the rudiments of ordinary culture, or to learn by heart any confession of faith. . . . Learning is not highly esteemed. The ignorance which has to be abolished is ignorance of a small body of practical "truths," as they are called. That all which exists is perishable and inevitably subject to sorrow ; that sorrow can be destroyed only by destroying desire and all that is attached to existence, and that Buddhism furnishes the way to the destruction of these—this conviction is what constitutes *knowledge*. All beings are by nature plunged in ignorance of these principles (and no wonder, since they are all false), and an effective conviction of their truth is knowledge. All other learning is disparaged. Questions of science, geography, astronomy, or even of metaphysics, are set aside as useless subtleties. Ignorance of these is not the ignorance that ruins. . . . The whole religion is said, as a matter

<sup>1</sup> Dhāmapadam, śl. 129, 130.

<sup>2</sup> De Quatrefages ('The Human Species') points out, from the point of view of an anthropologist, that (1) the belief in a being or beings superior to man, and (2) the belief in an after-life, are *universal* among men of every age and every clime, and constitute the greatest distinction between man and the lower animals.

<sup>3</sup> 'Buddhism,' pp. 104, 105.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



putrefies when dead. The description of these things in Buddhist writings is very graphic, and there is no reticence in it; in fact, the perusal of such passages produces a feeling of loathing in the mind of the reader, not for the ‘body of our humiliation,’<sup>1</sup> but for the perversion of view that deliberately shuts the eyes to all that is lovely, and gazes without reserve on—nay, rather prides itself in gloating over—whatever is repulsive.

The man who has become a member of the Order, and is at the first of the four stages on the Path to Nirvāṇa, is technically called a *sotāpanno*, ‘one who has entered the stream.’ He bursts in his onward progress the first three fetters, and when he dies he has only seven more births to undergo. When he has done this, he reaches the second stage, that of the *Sakadāgāmi*, which means ‘he who returns but once’ to this world. While in this stage he advances by diminishing Greed, Anger, and Infatuation in himself. After his death the believer who has attained to this second stage is reborn in one of the higher worlds. Returning to this world and again undergoing birth, he still presses onward, being known as an *anāgāmi*—one who is not liable to be reborn in this world. While living his last life on earth he bursts the fourth and fifth fetters, and entirely gets rid of all that still clings to him of Greed, Anger, and Infatuation. After his death he is reborn only in one of the *Brahmā*-worlds, from which he may attain to Nirvāṇa. Some, however, instead of passing through all these three stages in regular order in successive births, reach the fourth and final stage here, and are then known as *arahats*,<sup>2</sup> or perfect men. They have burst the five remaining fetters, and

<sup>1</sup> Τὸ σῶμα τῆς ταπεινώσεως ἡμῶν (Phil. iii. 21).

<sup>2</sup> Childers, *s.v.* *Sakadāgāmi*; *cf.* also his articles on *Sotāpanno*, *Arahā*, etc.



are free from all clinging to existence. Even while living they enter Nirvāṇa, and at death cease to exist. Each of these four Paths or Stages is divided into two, in the former of which the devotee strives till he reaches the position proper for him, and then in the latter subdivision 'eats the fruit' of his exertion. The ten fetters are divided into two groups of five each, the *orambhāgiya-sāmyojanāni*<sup>1</sup> and the *uddhambhāgiya-sāmyojanāni*. The first five 'belong to the lower lot,' because they cause rebirth in the world of sensuality—the hells, this world, and the *devalokos*. The last five are said to 'belong to the upper lot,' because they produce rebirth only in one of the divisions of the Brahmā-heavens. All this is explained by Buddha in the Mahāparinibbāna-Suttaṃ, where he says to his disciples: 'Those,<sup>2</sup> too, who shall at a future time be omniscient arahats, all those worshipful ones, having left behind them the five Hindrances, having discerned the defilements of the mind . . . with minds firmly fixed on the four Meditations, having brought into being the seven<sup>3</sup> constituents of knowledge as they really are, shall perfectly know the higher, perfect knowledge.' In relating the fate of certain deceased disciples, some of whom were only lay adherents, he speaks thus: 'The female<sup>4</sup> mendicant Nandā, . . . through loss of the five fetters which belong to the lower lot,

<sup>1</sup> Childers, *s.v.* Orambhāgiyo and Uddhambhāgiyo. See also the passages from the Mahāparinibbāna-Suttaṃ, quoted below.

<sup>2</sup> Mahāparinibbāna-Suttaṃ, p. 10: 'Ye pi te, bhante, bhavissanti anāgatam addhānaṃ arahanto sammāsambuddhā, sabbe te bhagavanto, pañca nīvaraṇe pabāya, cetaso upakkilese paññāya, dubbalīkaṇe catusu satipaṭṭhānesu supatiṭṭhitacittā satta bojjhaṅge yathābhūtam bhāvetvā, anuttaraṃ sammāsambodhiṃ abhisambujjhissanti.'

<sup>3</sup> The 'seven elements of knowledge' (*sambojjhaṅgo*) are mentioned in note 2 to p. 119.

<sup>4</sup> Mahāparinibbāna-Suttaṃ, p. 16.



being *apparitional* ' (that is to say, being born in a Brahmā-heaven without parents), ' and there becoming extinct, is not liable to return from that world. . . . More<sup>1</sup> than fifty lay adherents . . . having died, having become *apparitional* through loss of the five fetters of the lower lot, having there become extinct, are not liable to return from that world. Ninety efficient lay adherents . . . through loss of three fetters, from the diminution of greed, anger and infatuation, being *sakadāgāmīs*, having come to this world only once more, shall make an end of suffering. Five hundred efficient lay devotees . . . having died, becoming *sotāpannos* through the loss of three fetters, not being liable to a state of destruction (*apāyo*), are self-controlled, being sustained by perfect knowledge ' (of the Four Noble Truths).

All this shows the object and aim of Buddhist morality to be, not the attainment of holiness, but that of Nirvāṇa. We see also how thoroughly Buddha had incorporated into his system, though with modifications, the belief in transmigration which was prevalent among the Hindūs of his day, although this doctrine has been rightly supposed<sup>2</sup> to have formed no part of the original creed of the Āryans in any part of the world, but to have been borrowed by them in India from the earlier inhabitants<sup>3</sup> whom they had conquered.

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 17.

<sup>2</sup> *Vide* Rhys Davids' Hibbert Lectures for 1881, pp. 74, 75.

<sup>3</sup> Some similar explanation accounts for the belief in transmigration among the Gauls (Cæsar, 'De Bello Gallico,' vi. 14) and other Kelts.

Pythagoras probably learnt it in the East. Its occurrence in Pindar ('Ol.,' ii. 57 *et seq.*) is similarly explained. We find it held also by Empedocles, of whom Diogenes Laertius writes : καὶ τὴν ψυχὴν παντοῖα εἶδη ζώων καὶ φυτῶν ἐνδύεσθαι· φησὶ γοῶν,

Ἦδη γάρ ποτ' ἐγὼ γενόμεν κοῦρός τε, κορή τε,  
θάμνος τ', οἰωνός τε, καὶ ἐξ ἄλδος ἔμπυρος ἰχθύς,

'De Vit. Phil.,' lib. viii., cap. ii., § 12.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



Buddha replied :

‘Faith is man’s best possession here (below),  
The Law well performed brings happiness,  
Truth is indeed the sweetest of tastes,  
Living wisely they call the best life.’

The dialogue then proceeds as follows :

‘How, then, does one cross the flood (of passion)?  
How, then, does one cross the ocean (of existence)?  
How, then, does one overcome suffering?  
How, then, does one become purified?’

‘By faith one crosses the flood,  
By diligence the ocean ;  
By effort he overcomes suffering,  
By understanding he is purified.’

‘How, then, does one obtain understanding?  
How, then, does he find the treasure?  
How, then, does he gain fame?  
How does he weave friendships?  
(Having gone to) the world beyond this world,  
How does he not grieve hereafter?’

‘Believing the arahats,  
(Obeying) the Law for the obtaining of Nirvāṇa,  
By obedience he obtains understanding,  
He the diligent, the discerning.  
The burden-bearer who does what is becoming  
By exertion finds the treasure ;  
By truth he gains fame,  
Giving alms he weaves friendships,  
(Having gone to) the world beyond this world  
Thus he does not grieve hereafter.  
He to whom belong these four qualities  
Of the believer seeking a home,—  
Truth, self-restraint, energy, generosity,—  
He indeed does not grieve hereafter :  
(Having gone to) the world beyond this world,  
Thus he does not grieve hereafter.’<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Saṃyutta-Nikāyo, x. (Yakkha-Saṃyuttam), § 12, 9-14.



The demon was so charmed with this discourse that he vowed that he would henceforth wander about from village to village and from town to town praising the Perfect Buddha.

The following passage from the Jewel Chapter (Ratana-Suttaṃ) depicts the progress of the monk, and shows how he at length attains Nirvāṇa :

‘ The end, the absence of desire, the deathless, transcendent (state)  
Which the steadfast Śākya-ascetic attained,—  
With that condition there is nothing equal. . . .  
The purity which the chief Buddha praised,  
That they have styled uninterrupted calm (self-concentration),  
With that calm there is nothing equal. . . .  
Those who with firm purpose are closely attached  
To the precept of Gotamo the devoid-of-desire,  
They have attained *Arahat*-ship, having entered deathlessness.  
Having freely obtained they are enjoying Nirvāṇa. . . .  
Those who clearly understand the Noble Truths  
Well expounded by the deeply-wise One,  
Although they be very careless  
These do not obtain an eighth birth. . . .  
Immediately upon the attainment of this discernment  
Three conditions become rejected,—  
The heresy of Individuality, and Doubt,  
Like the Rite also, whatever it be ;  
And one is released from the Four Destructions  
And is not liable to commit the Six Crimes. . . .  
Although he commit an evil deed,  
Whether by body (act), word or thought,  
That man is not liable to the concealment of it.  
Declared is the non-liability of him who has seen Nirvāṇa.’<sup>1</sup>

The ‘eighth birth’ is spoken of because a novice (*samaṇero*), before he becomes a *sotāṇṇa*, has eight births into this world to dread. We have seen how the number of these births may be diminished. There are, however,

<sup>1</sup> Khuddaka-Nikāyo, Ratana-Suttaṃ, śll. 4, 5, 7, 9-11.



several expressions used in these verses which might easily be misunderstood, because a Buddhist uses them in a peculiar sense, very different from that which they have to a Christian's mind. The first of these is 'Purity' (*suci*). The passage we have quoted explains this word as meaning the Stoical calm of self-concentration, or purely abstract meditation. That is to say, this purity is not *moral* purity of deed or thought, but merely *abstraction* from all mundane affairs, the state of one no longer affected by pleasure or pain, by grief or passion, by longing for life or dread of death. Another word which is often translated by 'purity' is *visuddhi*, or *undefilement*, and of this we are told there are three kinds (though others are also mentioned)—to wit, 'purity of conduct' (*sīla-visuddhi*), 'purity of belief' (*ditṭhi-visuddhi*), and 'purity of mind' (*citta-visuddhi*). The former denotes merely the perfect keeping of the precepts of Buddhism,<sup>1</sup> and so also the other technical terms have a technical and philosophical rather than the moral meaning which we should be naturally inclined to attach to them. The 'Four Destructors' (*cattāro apāyā*) are four states of suffering, and denote the condition<sup>2</sup> of a man born again either in hell (*narako*), as an animal (*tiracchāno*), as a ghost (*peto*), and as an evil spirit (*asuro*). The 'Six Crimes' (*cha abhiṭhānāni*) are: matricide, parricide, murder of an *arahat*, murder of a Buddha, causing schism in the Community, and following another teacher.<sup>3</sup> 'Deathlessness' does not denote the immortality of the spirit, as we have already seen, but the state of Nirvāṇa; and the latter is so called because after it there is neither death nor life, since there is no further birth. In fact, to

<sup>1</sup> Hardy, 'Manual of Buddhism,' p. 193.

<sup>2</sup> Childers, *s.v.* Apāyo.

<sup>3</sup> Hardy, 'Eastern Monasticism,' p. 37.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



not be admitted to the monastic community, may, if they please, become members of the Order, and so completely useless in their day and generation, privileged idlers in this busy world. Certainly, to whatever other advantages it may lay claim, Buddhism cannot be said to point out the dignity of labour, to teach us that every man has his own work to do in the world, or to encourage self-denial for the good of others, unless, again, the self-denial be on the part of the lay adherent, and the 'others' are understood to be Buddhist mendicants.

∴ The 'benevolence' inculcated in some of the extracts which we have given above has been very much belauded by various European writers. Inasmuch as it taught consideration for the lives of the lower animals, it was very much required in the India of ancient times, no doubt, as it certainly needs to be inculcated in that country to-day. But let us hear Professor Oldenberg's opinion on this subject.

'Some,' he says,<sup>1</sup> 'who have endeavoured to bring Buddhism up to Christianity, have given compassionate love of all creatures as the kernel of the Buddhist's pure morality. In this there is something of truth. But the inherent difference of the two moral powers is still apparent. The language of Buddhism has no word for the poesy of Christian love, of which that hymn<sup>2</sup> of Paul's is full, the love which is greater than faith and hope, without which one, though he spoke with the tongue of men or of angels, would be a sounding brass or a tinkling cymbal; nor have the realities, in which that poetry assumed flesh and blood within the Christian world, had their parallel in the history of Buddhism. We may say

<sup>1</sup> 'Buddha' English translation, p. 292.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. xiii.



that love, such as it displays itself in Buddhist morality, oscillating between negative and positive, approaches Christian love, without actually touching it, in a way similar to that in which the beatitude of the Nirvāṇa, though fundamentally wholly different from the Christian idea of happiness, does to a certain extent . . . swing towards it. Buddhism does not so much enjoin on one to love his enemy as not to hate his enemy. It evokes and cherishes the emotion of friendly goodness and tender-heartedness towards all beings, a feeling in which the motive power is not the groundless, enigmatic self-surrender of love, but rather intelligent reflection, the conviction that it is thus best for all, and not least the expectation that the natural law of retribution will allot to such conduct the richest reward.'

It is one of the greatest and most remarkable defects of the Buddhist system of ethics that much less is expected of the *arāhat* or perfect man than of one who has not yet attained that stage. One who is slowly advancing along the Noble Eightfold Path must refrain from self-indulgence, and to some extent practise self-denial and endeavour to assist others. Thus, a lay adherent must not only give alms to the Buddhist monks and nuns, but he must also support his father and mother, his wife and children, and assist his relations if they require his aid. But a monk is under no obligation to help anyone but himself in any way, except, perhaps, by teaching them the Law. The novice is required to perform certain duties towards one more advanced in the Law than he is himself, but the converse of this rule does not hold good. So it is that it is said in the Dhammapadam, in describing the class of persons whom Buddha judges worthy to be called by the lofty title of Brāhmaṇ, which



there practically denotes the highest rank of Buddhist mendicants :

‘ He who has here overcome both good and evil, both bonds,  
The sorrowless, undefiled, purified man, him I call a Brāhmaṇ.’<sup>1</sup>

Such a man has escaped, as we see, not only from committing evil deeds, but from doing good ones. To do the latter would be a bond to existence, and therefore the perfect man must avoid such conduct. He must be indifferent to both alike, just as we have seen that he is bidden<sup>2</sup> to love no one, as well as to hate no one. Strange as this may appear to us, it follows naturally from the foundation principles of Buddhist morality and their essential selfishness.

We see this illustrated in the case of Buddha himself. Certain books of the Pāli canon inform us that, when he existed in previous births, he practised the ‘ten perfections’ (*dasa pāramiyo*)—that is to say, those ten virtues which a (Bodhisattva) Bodhisatto, or one who is in some future birth to become a Buddha, is bound to manifest in his conduct, as a necessary preparation for his ultimately attaining Buddhahood. These ‘ten perfections’ are: The<sup>3</sup> perfections of almsgiving, moral conduct, self-abnegation, understanding, energy, patience, truth, determination, benevolence, and equanimity. Each of these is again subdivided into the ordinary virtue of that name, and the same virtue in a lower and a higher degree. Thus, the

<sup>1</sup> Dham., śl. 412 :

‘ Yo’ dha puññañ-ca pāpañ-ca, ubho saṅgaṃ upaccagā,  
Asokaṃ, virajaṃ, suddhaṃ, tam ahaṃ brūmi brāhmaṇaṃ.’

<sup>2</sup> Above, Lecture II., p. 92 ; Dham., śll. 210-215.

<sup>3</sup> ‘Dānapāramitā, sīlapāramitā, nekkhamma-pāramitā, pañña-pāramitā, viriya-pāramitā, khanti-pāramitā, sacca-pāramitā, adhiṭṭhāna-pāramitā, metti-(or mettā-)pāramitā, upekhā-pāramitā’ (Childers’ Pāli Dictionary, s.v. Pāramī).





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



in a position to practise which the pauper monk could scarcely ever be.' It is quite in accordance with what we have said above regarding the defective principles of the Buddhist ethical system to find that Siddhattho (Siddhârtha) Gotamo, when he had once attained the position of a Buddha, did not even attempt to show forth any of these virtues. These perfections are not intended to be sought for their own sakes, in order to reach a perfect moral standard and to form a high and noble character; they are to be practised for a time only, and from a purely selfish desire to attain Buddhahood. The contrast between this and the motive for practising virtue set before the Jews as early as Moses' time, when we find Jehovah saying to His people, 'Ye shall be holy, for I the Lord your God am holy,'<sup>1</sup> and before us Christians, when our Lord says to His disciples, 'Ye therefore shall be perfect, as your heavenly Father is perfect,'<sup>2</sup> is as great as it is possible to imagine.

In order to give some idea of the way in which the canonical books of the Buddhists tell us that Buddha practised these virtues in previous existences, we proceed to quote a few of the many tales to that effect contained in the Cariyā-Piṭakam. Here, for example, we are informed that once upon a time Buddha was a<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Levit. xix. 2: קְדָשִׁים תִּהְיוּ כִּי רְדוּשׁ אֲנִי יְהוָה אֱלֹהֵיכֶם

<sup>2</sup> Matt. v. 48.

<sup>3</sup> Cariyā-Piṭakam, book iii., story vii.

‘ KAPIRĀJA-CARIYAM SATTAMAM.

- ‘ 1. Yadā aham kapi āsim nadī-kūle darī-saye,  
Pīlito sumsumārena gamanam na labhāmi ’ham.
- ‘ 2. Yamh’ okāse aham thatvā orapāram patām’ aham,  
Tatth’ acchī satthu vadhako kumbhilo ruddadassano.
- ‘ 3. So mam asamsi, Ehī-ti : aham Emī-ti tam vadi :  
Tassa matthakam akkamma parakūle patitṭhahim.
- ‘ 4. Na tassa alikam bhaṇitam yathā vācam akās’ aham :  
Saccena me samo n’ atthi : esā me sacca-pāramī-ti.”



monkey on the bank of a river, dwelling in a cave. There a crocodile continually lay in wait for him, and gave him no peace, pursuing him from one bank of the river to the other. Failing to capture the unfortunate monkey by any other means, the crocodile commanded him to come and give himself up to be eaten. The monkey said, 'I am coming,' and then, stepping down on his head, reached the farther shore. Buddha boasts that he kept his word in this way, and concludes by saying, 'There exists not my like in regard to truth: such is my perfection of truth.' What the disappointed crocodile thought about the matter is not stated, if he *was* disappointed, for the expression 'I stood firm upon the farther bank' *may* be intended to signify that the monkey was devoured by his enemy, and thus crossed the river of death.<sup>1</sup>

On another occasion Buddha is represented as stating that he was a man called Suvanṇo Sāmo, 'the comely black man,' being then, apparently, the god Sakko or Indra under that form. The story, which is put into Buddha's own mouth, runs as follows<sup>2</sup>:

' When I was Sāmo in the forest, caused by Sakko to assume that  
appearance,  
I presented myself in friendship on the mountain-slope towards the  
lion and the tiger.

---

<sup>1</sup> But if the story thus briefly told in the Cariyā-Piṭakam is identical with either the Sumsumāra-Jātaka or the Vānarinda-Jātaka (Jāt., ii. 158-160, 278-280), the monkey deceived the crocodile by telling him a lie, thereby saving his own life. It is hard, however, for the Western reader to understand how this proves that in previous births Buddha possessed the Perfection of *Truth*.

<sup>2</sup> Cariyā-Piṭakam, book iii., story xiii.; found also in the Asīti-Nipāto.

'SUVANNA-SĀMA-CARIYAM.

' 1. Sāmo yadā vane āsiṃ Sakkena abhinimmito,  
Pavane sīha-vyagghe-cā mettāyam upanāmayim.



With lions, tigers, panthers, bears and buffaloes,  
 Spotted antelopes, deer, boars, having associated I dwelt in the wood.  
 No one dreads me, nor do I fear anyone :  
 Upheld by the power of friendship I then rejoice on the mountain-  
 slope.'

This 'power of friendship' or benevolence is, as it were, a kind of magical influence which subdues hostility in the breasts of men and beasts alike. The Cullavaggo<sup>1</sup> tells us that Devadatto on one occasion let loose upon Buddha a furious elephant named Nālāgiri, or 'Elephant Mountain,' on account of his enormous size. But the monster was completely subdued by this power of benevolence which resided in Buddha, and was unable to do him any harm.

Buddha himself, he informs us, on one occasion existed in the form of an elephant, and he tells the story to show how he possessed and manifested in that state the 'Perfection of Moral Conduct' (*sīla-pāramitā*). The tale is thus related in the Cariyā-Piṭakam<sup>2</sup> :

- ' 1. When I was an elephant, nourishing my mother on the mountain-slope,  
 Then there is not on earth my like in virtue.
- ' 2. A forester, having seen me on the mountain-slope, informed the King,  
 "An elephant worthy of thee, great King, dwells in the grove."
- ' 3. He has no need of ditch nor of stake-pit :  
 Having grasped me by the trunk, (he says,) "Come hither even of thyself."

' 2. Sīha-vyagghehi dīpehi acchehi mahisehi-ca  
 Pasadamiga-varāhehi parivāretvā vane vasim.

' 3. Na maṃ koci uttassati na pi bhāyāmi kassaci  
 Mettābalen' upatthaddho ramāmi pavane tadā-ti.'

<sup>1</sup> Cullavaggo, VII., iii. 12.

<sup>2</sup> Cariyā-Piṭakam, book ii., story i. : 'Sīlava-nāga-cariyam.'





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



were to ask me.' One day the Brāhmaṇs came to him when he was going out to give alms, mounted on a beautiful and incomparable white elephant, the value of which was enhanced by the fact that he was supposed to be an emblem of good fortune. They told him that there were many people famine-stricken in the country, and begged him to give them his elephant as alms. The Prince gladly complied. But the people of the land were incensed at the loss of the elephant, and banished Vessantaro from the country, ordering him to depart to the Crooked Mountain. Asking as a final boon permission to give a great feast to the Brāhmaṇs, Vessantaro departed from his palace in a chariot drawn by four horses, accompanied only by his affectionate wife, Princess Maddī, and his two little children, a boy named Jāli, and a little daughter called Kaṇhājinā. Very soon, however, the Prince gave away his chariot and horses. He then turned to his wife and said : ' Do<sup>1</sup> thou, Maddī, take Kaṇhā—this younger sister is light ; I shall take Jāli, for that little brother is heavy.' As they went along they inquired of those whom they met the way to the mountain, but were distressed at hearing that it was very far away. ' If<sup>2</sup> the children see fruit-bearing trees on the mountain-slope, the children weep for those fruits. Those broad trees, planted in the ground, having seen the children weeping, bowing down of themselves, approach the little ones,' much to the astonishment of Maddī. The demons (*yakkhos*), out of compassion for

<sup>1</sup> *Loc. cit.*, śl. 29.

<sup>2</sup> *Loc. cit.*, śll. 34, 35 :

' Yadi passanti pavane dârikâ phalite dumē,  
tesaṃ phalânaṃ hetumhi uparodanti dârikâ.  
Rodante dârike disvâ ubbidhâ vipulâ dumâ,  
Sayam ev' oṇamitvâna upagacchanti dârike.'



the children, shortened the road, and the royal party reached their destination at sunset. Sakko then caused a wonder-working sage called Vissukammo to prepare for them a dwelling-place hollowed out of the mountain-side. 'Having<sup>1</sup> pierced into the quiet, noiseless declivity, we four persons dwell there within the mountain. Both Maddī the Princess, both Jāli and Kaṇhājinā, then abide in the cell, soothing one another's sorrow. Guarding the children, I am not desolate in the hermitage. Maddī brings fruit; she feeds us three persons.' But this quiet life was soon to be put an end to, and that through what Vessantaro regarded as most virtuous conduct on his part. 'When<sup>2</sup> I dwelt in the hermitage,' says Buddha, 'a traveller came to me. He asked for my little children, for both Jāli and Kaṇhājinā. Having seen the beggar who had come, mirth arose within me. Having taken both children, I gave them then to the Brāhmaṇ. When I had abandoned my own children to the Brāhmaṇ

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, śll. 43-45.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, śll. 46-53 :

' Pavane vasamānassa addhiko maṃ upāgami,  
 āyāci puttake mayhaṃ Jālikaṇhājine c'ubho.  
 Yācakam upagataṃ disvā, hāso me upapajjatha :  
 ubho putte gahetvāna adāsi brāhmaṇe tadā.  
 Sake putte cajantassa yācake brāhmaṇe yadā,  
 tadāpi paṭhavī kampi Sineruvanavaṭaṃsakā.  
 Punad eva Sakko oruyha hutvā brāhmaṇasaṇṇibho  
 āyāci maṃ Maddideviṃ sīlavatiṃ patibbataṃ.  
 Maddiṃ hatthe gahetvāna, udakañjalim pūraya,  
 paṣannamanasañkappo tassa Maddiṃ adās' ahaṃ.  
 Maddiyā dīyamānāya gagane devā pamoditā,  
 tadāpi paṭhavī kampi Sineruvanavaṭaṃsakā.  
 Jālikaṇhājinaṃ dhītaṃ Maddideviṃ patibbataṃ  
 cājjaṃmano na cintesiṃ bodhiyā yeva kāraṇā.  
 Na me dessā ubho puttā, Maddī devi na dessiyā,  
 sabbaññutaṃ piyaṃ mayhaṃ tasmā piye adās' ahaṃ.



beggar, then, too, the earth with Mount Meru and its banyan-woods trembled. Even once more Sakko, having descended in the likeness of a Brāhmaṇ, and having offered sacrifice, asked me for the Princess Maddī, the virtuous, the devoted. Taking Maddī by the hand, and filling with water the hollow of her joined hands, I gave Maddī to him with pleased resolution of mind. When Maddī was being given away, the gods in the sky were joyful; then, too, the earth with Mount Meru and its banyan-woods trembled. Abandoning Jāli and my daughter Kaṇhajinā and the devoted Princess Maddī, I regarded it not, just for the sake of (obtaining) Buddhahood. Not hateful to me were both the children, the Princess Maddī was not hateful; (but) omniscience was dear to me, therefore did I give away my dear ones.'

Nothing in the whole of the Three Piṭakas affords a better illustration of the system of ethics inculcated by Buddha. It is not to the purpose to urge that the events here mentioned never really occurred. Buddha seemed to believe that they had, and he related this story as a proof (not of his folly and inhumanity, but) of his having completely carried out all that was necessary to the attainment of the 'Perfection of Almsgiving.' Nor was all this done out of pity for those in distress. He tells us candidly that when he was Prince Vessantaro he gave up all things and sacrificed his virtuous and devoted wife and his little children merely for the sake of obtaining an advantage for himself. The perversion of the moral sense which this story demonstrates is one of the most marked and all-pervading characteristics of the whole of Buddha's moral code. Those who know modern Buddhism best declare that the immorality<sup>1</sup> and in-

<sup>1</sup> 'The Sinhalese are reported by a Commissioner who came to inquire into the criminal statistics of the island to stand first on the





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



Even the excellence of some of its precepts, therefore, could not save Buddhism from extinction<sup>1</sup> in India itself, the land of its birth. Buddha could appeal to no motive in men other than selfishness. Even the very virtues which he inculcated upon others were not in general, he taught, incumbent upon the highest classes of his followers, nor does he seem to have even practised them himself—at least in *this* life. Whatever is good in Buddhist ethics is due to the light of conscience and reason, which even a false philosophy could not entirely extinguish. And the existence of such teaching as to the value, for instance, of truth, chastity, benevolence, and self-denial, should encourage us disciples of Christ to toil for the evangelization of the Buddhist world, feeling assured that the ‘Light which lighteth every man

---

the attainment of perfection, debauchery of the most bestial character, not even excepting mothers, sisters, and daughters, is reckoned as most essential. . . . The sixth is devoted to secret mantras, like the *Vīja* mantras of the Tāntras, to meditation of mystic diagrams, and to training necessary for such meditation. . . . The means of attaining perfection, described in the next chapter, are not to be austerity, privations, and painful, rigorous observances, but the enjoyment of all the pleasures of the world, and the way[s] in which some of the pleasures are described are simply revolting.’ The same writer goes on to give some further details which are too vile to be transcribed here, and proves what he says by quoting certain verses of this book in the original Sanskrit. This shows what the much-bepraised ‘Esoteric Buddhism’ of India really was, and makes it clear that it is not only in modern times that the *corruptions* of Buddhism have produced immorality; for there can be no doubt that these evil theories and practices were quite alien to the original teaching of Buddha.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Mon. Williams, ‘Buddhism,’ p. 162 *et seq.*; Barth, ‘Religions of India,’ pp. 132-138. Barth says (p. 136): ‘Everything . . . tends to prove that Buddhism became extinct from sheer exhaustion, and that it is in its own inherent defects we must especially seek for the causes of its disappearance.’



coming into the world '1 has not left Himself without a witness even in the hearts of men whose judgment an atheistic philosophy has perverted—and many of whom, we may well believe, unconsciously perhaps, but none the less really, thirst for the living God, of whom Buddha could teach them nothing—who claims all souls<sup>2</sup> as His own, and gave His Son to redeem them unto Himself.

<sup>1</sup> John i. 9 : Ἦν τὸ φῶς τὸ ἀληθινὸν δ φωτίζει πάντα ἄνθρωπον ἐρχόμενον εἰς τὸν κόσμον.

<sup>2</sup> Ezek. xviii. 4 : הֵן כָּל-הַנְּפֹשֹׁת לִי



## LECTURE IV

### BUDDHISM AND CHRISTIANITY

‘ O Father, touch the East, and light  
The light that shone when Hope was born.’

TENNYSON : *In Memoriam*, xxx.

Πάντα δοκιμάζετε, τὸ καλὸν κατέχετε (1 Thess. v. 21).

HAVING now briefly considered the main philosophical dogmas and the ethics of Buddhism, it is our purpose in the present lecture to inquire what is the exact relation between Buddhism and Christianity, and in especial the Christianity of the New Testament. The subject naturally divides itself into three parts : First, a comparison between some of the distinguishing features of Buddhism and those of the Christian faith ; second, a contrast between them in certain very important points ; and, third, an investigation of the question whether Buddhism has had any influence upon Christianity either originally or in later times.

1. In comparing Buddhism with Christianity we perceive that Buddha's teaching contains much thought and not a little truth. We may learn much, too, from even the failures and the errors of this philosophy. Buddha thought that, without any Divine assistance, he could explain to men how they ought to live, and at what they





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



and which are rarely completely extinguished in this life, even in the most vicious and abandoned of our fellow-creatures. In a word, the only thing that can lift a man out of himself and make him capable of heroism, self-sacrifice, and true nobility of character, is Love.

‘Love took up the harp of *Life* and smote on all the chords  
with might;

Smote the chord of Self, that, trembling, passed in music out  
of sight.’<sup>1</sup>

But this love, to be perfect, should be directed to Him that is perfect; and love to the parent can be awakened in the heart of the child only by the child’s experience of a father’s, a mother’s, love to it. Hence the Apostle tells us, ‘Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us;’<sup>2</sup> and he reminds us of the only way in which it was possible for us to learn to love God, by saying, ‘We love because He first loved us.’<sup>3</sup> This, and not selfishness, not the desire to escape from temporal or eternal misery, not even the longing for happiness here or hereafter, is the mainspring of all of the noblest and truest Christian efforts. We cannot wonder that Buddha knew nothing of this, but we can see how ignorance of this grand truth rendered his teaching a failure, and made his philosophy contradict itself. Not having the key to unlock the mystery of human existence, it is no marvel that the mass of human suffering not only appalled him, but proved to him a mystery incapable of solution. He could see nothing in existence, in any form of existence, but misery. Existence itself seemed to him therefore an evil, unmeaning, leading to no goal, requiring to be

<sup>1</sup> Tennyson, ‘Locksley Hall.’

\* <sup>2</sup> I John iv. 10: ‘Ἐν τούτῳ ἐστὶν ἡ ἀγάπη, οὐχ ὅτι ἡμεῖς ἠγαπήσαμεν τὸν Θεόν, ἀλλ’ ὅτι αὐτὸς ἠγάπησεν ἡμᾶς.

\* <sup>3</sup> I John iv. 19: ‘Ἡμεῖς ἀγαπῶμεν, ὅτι αὐτὸς πρῶτος ἠγάπησεν ἡμᾶς.



‘extinguished’ as soon as possible. Peace and rest could be attained only through the cessation of being. Holding that all things are bound together in the chain of causation, he was far from grasping the fact that there is a Divine, ‘Eternal Purpose’<sup>1</sup> in all things, overruling all things for good, bringing good out of evil,<sup>2</sup> and bound ultimately to triumph and be accomplished. Buddha knew not

‘That nothing walks with aimless feet,  
That not one life shall be destroyed,  
Or cast as rubbish to the void,  
When God hath made the pile complete.’<sup>3</sup>

Nay, rather, to Buddha all things seemed aimless and purposeless, since Nature was self-originated, or, if not, had originated in such a way that it in no wise concerned mankind to know the secret of its origin. Hence he made no effort to investigate the origin of anything except that of the dread fact of Suffering. It is not, therefore, surprising that the solution of this problem which he enunciated was incorrect. He closed his eyes to all that was good and beautiful in the world, deliberately choosing rather to view and meditate upon all that was loathsome and disgusting. Buddha perceived the truth afterwards expressed in the first clause of the Apostle’s dictum, ‘The things which are seen are

<sup>1</sup> Eph. iii. 11 : . . . κατὰ πρόθεσιν τῶν αἰώνων ἣν ἐποίησεν ἐν τῷ Χριστῷ.  
Hence Tennyson sings of the

‘One far-off divine event,  
To which the whole creation moves.’  
‘In Memoriam.’

<sup>2</sup> ‘O yet we trust that somehow good  
Will be the final goal of ill.’

*Ibid.*

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, liv.



temporal';<sup>1</sup> but he could never rise—even as far as his philosophical predecessors in India itself had done in their theories about the *âtma*, the *paramâtmâ*, and the *purusha*<sup>2</sup>—in the direction of the apprehension of what St. Paul says in the concluding clause of the verse, 'The things which are not seen are eternal.'<sup>3</sup>

This affords us one example out of many of the *half-truths* to be found in Buddha's teaching. We now proceed to mention a few more.

Buddha perceived and taught, as clearly and forcibly, perhaps, as anyone else has ever done, that man cannot find on earth and in earthly things alone the satisfaction of the spiritual needs of which he is dimly conscious, and that true and abiding peace and happiness for which he yearns. In his address to his followers quoted in our first lecture,<sup>4</sup> he informs us that he himself left his home and all its pleasures because he had learnt how unsatisfactory and transitory are all earthly joys and sensual pleasures. In this he was wiser far than the old Assyrian epicure who, as the ancient story has it, caused to be engraved on his statue near Anchialê the words, 'Eat,

\* 2 Cor. iv. 18: Τὰ γὰρ βλέπόμενα πρόσκαιρα. Cf. Dhammapadam, cap. xx., sl. 277 :

'Sabbe saṃkhârâ aniccâ ti, yadâ paññâya passati,  
Atha nibbindatî dukkhe ; esa maggo visuddhiyâ.'

Cf. also Mahâparinibbâna-Suttaṃ, cap. vi., p. 62 :

'Aniccâ vata saṅkhârâ uppâdavayadhammino,  
Uppajjitvâ nirujjhanti : tesaṃ vûpasamo sukho ti.'

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Iṣvara-Kṛishṇa's 'Sâñkhya-Kârikâ,' *passim*. Though very different in every way, yet the Platonic theory of *ideas* is another instance of a philosophy rising to the conception of the eternal reality of the unseen.

\*<sup>3</sup> 2 Cor. iv. 18 : τὰ δὲ μὴ βλέπόμενα αἰώνια.

<sup>4</sup> Lecture L, pp. 20, 21.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



But Buddha was never able to counterbalance this half-truth, as Solomon was, by pointing to that which is *not* vanity, to that which renders earthly life precious and noble, to that which shows man for what end and aim he was created and preserved: 'This is the end of the matter; all has been heard: fear God and keep His commandments, for this is the whole duty of man. For God shall bring every work into judgment, with every hidden thing, whether it be good, or whether it be evil.'<sup>1</sup>

Nor was it of earthly joys alone that the vanity was patent to Buddha. He knew that even the fabled joys of the age-long existences in the numerous heavens of which he spoke could not of themselves satisfy the human heart.<sup>2</sup> They were all unstable, he taught, bound some day to come to an end,<sup>3</sup> and their very transitoriness prevented them from rendering happy either man or gods. While, therefore, worldliness is vain, 'other-worldliness,' too, is useless and worse than useless. But he did not know what is the secret of true happiness; he could not gain or give any peace higher than that which the world offers, or that baseless equanimity which he told his disciples they might obtain by weaning themselves from all things earthly, and becoming with Stoic fortitude indifferent alike to pleasure and pain, to good and evil. How far does his teaching in this respect fall short of that of the Light of the World and of His gracious promise, which, as many of us doubtless know by experience, He fulfils to His people: 'Peace I leave with you; My peace I give unto you:

✂ <sup>1</sup> Eccles. xii. 13, 14, Revised Version.

<sup>2</sup> 'Api dibbesu kâmesu ratim so nâdhigacchatî;  
Tanhakkhayarato hoti sammâsambuddhasâvako.'

Dham., sl. 187.

<sup>3</sup> 'Sabbe sañkhârâ aniccâ' (Dham., sl. 277).



not as the world giveth, give I unto you.'<sup>1</sup> 'These things have I spoken unto you, that in Me ye may have peace. In the world ye have tribulation : but be of good cheer ; I have overcome the world.'<sup>2</sup>

One of the most valuable of all Buddha's half-truths is to be found in what he so continually repeats regarding the deep importance of our conduct here. We have already seen that he teaches that a man *must*, either here or in some future state, 'eat the fruit of his deeds,'<sup>3</sup> whether good or ill. He held that no power, human or Divine, could undo what had once been done, could prevent a man from receiving to the full the good or evil consequences of every single act. No repentance, no rites or ceremonies, no degree of asceticism, no number of good deeds, would suffice to obliterate a single evil act. Of course, there is a terrible truth underlying all this, and one which we Christians are sometimes in great danger of forgetting. Peter's repentance could not to all

✠ John xiv. 27 : Εἰρήνην ἀφίημι ὑμῖν, εἰρήνην τὴν ἐμὴν δίδωμι ὑμῖν· οὐ καθὼς ὁ κόσμος δίδωσιν, ἐγὼ δίδωμι ὑμῖν.

✠ John xvi. 33.

<sup>3</sup> Lecture II., pp. 75, 78 ; cf. the following verses of the Dhammapadam :

'Caranti bâlâ dummedhâ amittenêva attanâ,  
Karonâtâ pâpakam kammam, yam hoti kaṭukapphalam.'  
Sl. 66.

'Madhuvâ maññatî bâlo, yâva pâpam na paccati :  
Yadâ-ca paccatî pâpam, atha bâlo dukkham nigacchati.'  
Sl. 69.

Pâpo pi passatî bhadram, yâva pâpam na paccati ;  
Yadâ-ca paccatî pâpam, atha pâpo pâpâni passati :  
Bhadro pi passatî pâpam,  
Yâva bhadram na paccati ;  
Yadâ-ca paccati bhadram,  
Atha bhadro bhadrâni passati.'

Sl. 119, 120.

Cf. also sl. 15-17, 127, 137-140, 219, 220.



eternity undo his denial of his Master. David's confession of his sin, though we are told that God forgave him, did not secure him from the punishment—the loss of his child, and the other family troubles of after-years. Not all the piety of John Newton's later years could obliterate the dark record against him in reference to his early connexion with the slave-trade. Nor is it possible even to imagine the possibility of entirely undoing any deed, good or bad, that has ever been done since the world began. Holy Scripture teaches us this in the clearest and most decisive language. 'Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to his own flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth unto the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap eternal life.'<sup>1</sup>

But though our reason fails to find any remedy for this terrible state of things, yet we feel, as Buddha felt, that there *must* be a remedy of some kind, else not mere pessimism, but the blackest despair, would drive the thoughtful man to madness. Buddha, however, was unable to explain how there *can* be any remedy. He taught that, perhaps after innumerable ages and world-cycles spent in hell, perhaps in a briefer period, though one sufficiently long, the suffering which was the 'fruit' of evil-doing would work itself out. *How* this was possible, how each deed was to be prevented from perpetuating its consequences to all eternity, he failed to explain, and no wonder, for reason seems to give no encouragement to the hope that evil will ultimately come to an end of itself. Reason and Scripture, on the

<sup>1</sup> Gal. vi. 7, 8: Μὴ πλανᾶσθε, Θεὸς οὐ μυκτηρίζεται. ὁ γὰρ ἐὰν σπείρῃ ἄνθρωπος, τοῦτο καὶ θερίσει· ὅτι ὁ σπείρων εἰς τὴν σάρκα ἑαυτοῦ ἐκ τῆς σαρκὸς θερίσει φθοράν, ὁ δὲ σπείρων εἰς τὸ πνεῦμα ἐκ τοῦ πνεύματος θερίσει ζωὴν αἰώνιον.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



more helpful to sinners than the holiest and most spotless angel<sup>1</sup> could ever be, then we at least are able to believe, even 'where we cannot prove,' that good will finally triumph, and that 'for evil' there will, when God's purpose is accomplished, be 'so much good more.'<sup>2</sup> Buddha felt, as did Æschylus,<sup>3</sup> that an evil deed brings its own punishment to the evil-doer; he could say, as did Horace, 'Nemo malus felix,' and this he most clearly taught. But the other, the compensating half of the truth, which Reason demands, and yet cannot explain or prove, he knew not.

<sup>1</sup> 'I held it truth, with him who sings  
To one clear harp in divers tones,  
That men may rise on stepping-stones  
Of their dead selves to higher things.'

'In Memoriam,' i.

<sup>2</sup> 'What was good shall be good, with, for evil, so much good more;  
On the earth the broken arcs; in heaven a perfect round. . . .  
And what is our failure here but a triumph's evidence  
For the fulness of the days? Have we withered or agonized?  
Why else was the pause prolonged but that singing might issue  
thence?

Why rushed the discords in but that harmony should be prized?

Browning, 'Abt Vogler.'

<sup>3</sup> Æschylus, *passim*—e.g.:

Τὸ δυσσεβὲς γὰρ ἔργον  
μετὰ μὲν πλείονα τίκτει, σφετέρᾳ δ' εἰκότα γεννᾷ.

'Agam.,' vv. 757-766.

Τὸ τοι κάκον ποδῶκες ἔρχεται βροτοῖς,  
καὶ τ' ἀμπλάκημα τῷ περῶντι τὴν θέμιν.  
ὀρᾷς δίκην ἀναυδον, οὐχ ὀρωμένην,  
εὕδοντι καὶ στείχοντι καὶ καθημένῳ  
ἐξῆς ὀπάζει δόχμιον, ἄλλοθ' ὕστερον.  
οὐκ ἐγκαλύπτει νύξ κακῶς εἰργασμένον.  
ὅ, τι δ' ἂν ποιῆς δεινόν, νόμιζ' ὀρᾷν τινά.

Æschylus, quoted by Dionysius  
apud Theophilum 'ad Autolycum,' ii. 37.



Buddha also proclaimed the fact that men should strive to burst the fetters<sup>1</sup> which tend to bind them to this transitory world. He held that 'Life is real, life is earnest,' but could not realize that 'the grave is not its goal.'<sup>2</sup> On the contrary, he taught that death is the end towards which all existence tends—in fact, that 'extinction' should be sought as the best thing of all for all beings, high and low. He had a conviction of the existence of the *expedient*, τὸ πρέπον, though the higher idea of the good, τὸ καλόν, was beyond him. He taught the propriety of entertaining a feeling of universal kindness even to the lower animals,<sup>3</sup> though the confusion in his system between the beast<sup>4</sup> and the human made him unable to distinguish properly between the guilt of murder and the act of, even unconsciously, putting to death the humblest form of animal life. To him there would have been no meaning in what even Greek philosophers<sup>5</sup> held regarding a likeness between God and man; much less could he conceive of man as created in the image of God.<sup>6</sup> He acknowledged—as did Socrates<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *E.g.*, Dhammapadam, śll. 397, 398:

'Sabba-saṃyojanam chetvā yo ve na paritassati,  
Saṅgātigaṃ viṣaṃyuttaṃ, tam ahaṃ brūmi brāhmaṇam.  
Chetvā nandhiṃ varattañ-ca,  
Sandānam sahanukkamaṃ,  
Ukkhittapaḷighaṃ buddhaṃ,  
Tam ahaṃ brūmi brāhmaṇam.'

<sup>2</sup> Longfellow.

<sup>3</sup> In the Metta-Suttaṃ, the Karanīyamettasuttaṃ, etc.

<sup>4</sup> Lactantius well says: 'Hominum atque mutorum vel solum, vel certe maximum in relligione discrimen est' ('Instt. Div.,' lib. II.; cap. iii.).

<sup>5</sup> Pindar, 'Nem.,' vi. 1, 2 (*vide* p. 108).

<sup>6</sup> Gen. i. 27.

<sup>7</sup> Plato, 'Apol. Soc.'; Xenophon, 'Memorabilia Soc.'; *cf.* Plato, 'De Legibus,' iv. : Τίμιος μὲν δὴ καὶ ὁ μηδὲν ἀδικῶν· ὁ δὲ μηδ' ἐπιτρέπων τοῖς ἀδικοῦσιν ἀδικεῖν, πλεον ἢ διπλάσιας τίμῃς ἀξίος ἐκείνου.



—that one should not cherish a feeling of revenge,<sup>1</sup> and return evil for evil, but he can hardly be said to have reached the height of the second part of the Apostolic precept, ‘Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.’<sup>2</sup> [The precept, Render not ‘evil for evil, or reviling for reviling,’<sup>3</sup> may be paralleled in the Buddhist Scriptures,<sup>4</sup> but the continuation, ‘but contrariwise blessing,’ cannot. Buddha held, as did Confucius, that ‘Reciprocity’<sup>5</sup> was a good thing as between man and man; but the Golden Rule of Christ, bidding us do unto others as we would that they should do unto us<sup>6</sup>—that rule which even in its negative form the Emperor Alexander Severus<sup>7</sup> admired so much, when he learnt it from the Christians, that he had it inscribed in his palace and proclaimed aloud by the crier—was as far from dawning upon him as it was from being discovered by any other of the philosophers of antiquity.<sup>8</sup> Self-sacrifice he inculcated as one of the ten principal virtues,

<sup>1</sup> Dhammapadam, śll. 3-5.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. xii. 21; *cf.* verses 14, 17; Matt. v. 44 *et seq.* The nearest parallel to this in the Three Piṭakas is Dham., śl. 223, quoted above, p. 123.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Pet. iii. 9.

<sup>4</sup> Dham., śll. 3-5, 133, 134.

<sup>5</sup> Confucian ‘Analects,’ book XV., cap. xxiii.

<sup>6</sup> Matt. vii. 12.

<sup>7</sup> ‘Clamabatque sæpius, quod a quibusdam sive Iudæis sive Christianis audierat, et tenebat; idque per præconem quum aliquem emendaret, dici iubebat, “Quod tibi fieri non vis, alteri ne feceris.” Quam sententiam usque adeo dilexit, ut et in Palatio et in publicis operibus præscribi iuberet’ (Ælii Lampridii ‘Alexander Severus,’ li.). The command in this negative form is apparently taken from Christian writers (*cf.* Augustine, ‘De Doct. Christiana,’ lib. iii.).

<sup>8</sup> Perhaps the nearest to the Golden Rule are the words attributed to Aristotle, of whom it is said that, when asked, Πῶς ἂν τοῖς φίλοις προσφέρωμεθα, he replied, Ὡς ἂν εὐξάμεθα αὐτοὺς ἡμῖν προσφέρεισθαι





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



ence, than the family man, the householder. It is not surprising to learn that this attempt to 'drive out nature with a pitchfork'<sup>1</sup> has failed, resulting among the Buddhist monks<sup>2</sup> of Japan and China to-day in very gross immorality, just as a similar attempt in the Greek and Roman Churches has done only too frequently in Europe.

2. We now proceed to contrast Buddhism with Christianity in some of the many particulars in which the difference is not, as it may seem to be in some of the previous examples, in degree, but in kind.

Buddhism is a doctrine of despair, Christianity of hope. Buddha saw clearly enough the sorrow, misery, pain, and ultimate death of which the world is so full. He did not discover that all this is the fruit of sin, for, not knowing God, he did not know of any Divine Law of which sin is the transgression.<sup>3</sup> Nor did he perceive that good may come out of evil, that existence is an evil only when abused, but of itself is a good thing, a thing to be thankful for. He believed that certain deeds produced evil consequences, and tended to misery, while others produced certain kinds of happiness, or at least the appearance of it. But he really increased men's misery, instead of lessening it, by teaching them that they should always look at the gloomy side of life, and not at

---

Etam dalham bandhanam āhu dhīrā,  
 Ohāriṇaṃ sithilaṃ duppamuñcaṃ :  
 Etam pi chetvāna paribbajanti  
 Anapekhino kāmasukhaṃ pahāya.'

<sup>1</sup> 'Naturam expellas furca, tamen usque recurret' (Horace, Ep. i., 10, 24).

<sup>2</sup> For the state of things in Ceylon, *vide* Copleston, 'Buddhism,' p. 483.

<sup>3</sup> 'Ἡ ἀμαρτία ἐστὶν ἡ ἀνομία (1 John iii. 4).'



its bright one; that all joy was fleeting and transitory, and therefore unreal, and to be despised by the wise man. Only by becoming insensible and indifferent<sup>1</sup> to joy could a man become indifferent to sorrow. Hence, when Buddha had left his home, and cut himself off from father and family, wife and son, he boasted that he was delivered from the power of Māro:

‘ I am freed from all ties, those which are divine and those which are human ;

I am freed from the great bond : thou art smitten down, O deadly One.’<sup>2</sup>

Neither on earth nor in heaven, he taught, could happiness be found; the only true happiness lay in the extinction, firstly, of all the passions, good as well as evil, and then of existence itself.<sup>3</sup> Thus, we find in Buddhism the most pronounced and utter pessimism. On one occasion, we are told, Māro came to try him by telling him something of the joys of life, and said :

‘ The possessor of sons rejoices in his sons,  
So also does the owner of kine rejoice in his kine :  
A man’s joy is in his impulses (*upadhi*),  
He indeed who is devoid of impulses rejoices not.’<sup>4</sup>

But Buddha utterly refuses to look at any but the gloomy aspect of things. Possession of worldly things to him

<sup>1</sup> Dham., §ll. 93-99.

<sup>2</sup> Samyutta-Nikāyo (Māra-Samyuttam), book IV., cap. i., § 5 : 4.

<sup>3</sup> With this compare the speech of Silênus to Midas : *Δαίμονος ἐπιπόνου καὶ τύχης χαλεπῆς ἐφήμερον σπέρμα, τί με βιάζεσθε λέγειν ἃ ὑμῖν ἄρειον μὴ γινῶναι ; μετ’ ἀγνοίας γὰρ τῶν οἰκείων κακῶν ἀλνπότατος ὁ βίος. ἀνθρώποις δὲ πᾶμπαν οὐκ ἐστὶ γενέσθαι τὸ πάντων ἄριστον, οὐδὲ μετασχεῖν τῆς τοῦ βελτίστου φύσεως. ἄριστον γὰρ πᾶσι καὶ πάσαις τὸ μὴ γενέσθαι· τὸ μὲν τοι μετὰ τοῦτο, καὶ τὸ πρῶτον τῶν ἄλλων ἀνυστόν, δεύτερον δὲ, τὸ γενομένους ἀποθανεῖν ὡς τάχιστα (Arist., Frag. Eud.).*

<sup>4</sup> Samyutta-Nikāyo (*ibid.*, book IV., cap. i., § 9 : 2, 3.



means misery, for they may be lost. He therefore replies :

‘The possessor of sons grieves for his sons,  
So also does the owner of kine grieve for his kine :  
A man’s grief is in his impulses,  
He indeed who is devoid of impulses grieves not.’

In contrast to this despair and universal pessimism, Christianity is the religion of hope and of joy. Buddha, with all his self-inflicted privations and troubles, was not called upon to endure anything in any degree to be compared with the sufferings, physical and mental, to which the Apostles and so many of their converts were exposed. Yet we find Paul and Silas singing in their prison at midnight,<sup>1</sup> in spite of their bleeding wounds. Paul describes himself and his fellow-believers as ‘perplexed, yet not unto despair.’<sup>2</sup> And who that has once heard that triumph-song at the end of 1 Cor. xv. can ever forget the hopefulness—nay, rather, the joyful certainty—which sounds forth from its grandly-solemn tones? ‘O death, where is thy victory? O death, where is thy sting? . . . Thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.’<sup>3</sup> Our Lord just before His Passion tells His disciples: ‘Ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy,’<sup>4</sup> and bids them ‘Ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be fulfilled.’<sup>5</sup> And, even amid all the fiery trial by which they were tried, St. Peter can write to and of his fellow-disciples a few years later, saying that, through faith in the unseen Saviour, they ‘rejoice greatly with joy unspeakable and full of glory.’<sup>6</sup> Right through the ages from that time to this we find the joy and happiness of the Christian scattering the gloom of life, and bringing

<sup>1</sup> Acts xvi. 25.

<sup>4</sup> John xvi. 20.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. iv. 8.

<sup>5</sup> John xvi. 24.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. xv. 55.

<sup>6</sup> 1 Pet. i. 8.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



which our Lord left with His disciples,<sup>1</sup> and in which we may all share—the peace and calm amid the storm<sup>2</sup> of trouble and suffering which animated those who are described as ‘giving<sup>3</sup> no occasion of stumbling in anything, that our ministration be not blamed; but in everything commending ourselves as ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses, in stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings; in pureness, in knowledge, in long-suffering, in kindness, in the Holy Ghost, in love unfeigned, in the word of truth, in the power of God; by the armour of righteousness on the right hand and on the left, by glory and dishonour, by evil report and good report: as deceivers and yet true; as unknown and yet well known; as dying, and, behold, we live; as chastened and not killed; as sorrowful, yet always rejoicing; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, and yet possessing all things.’

This leads us to another matter, in which Christianity and Buddhism stand to one another in direct opposition, or, at least, in striking contrast. Buddha's followers were compelled, if they wished to enter his Order, to come out of the world, to live a life openly different from that of laymen, to avoid identifying themselves with other men, or even associating with them, except for the sake of instructing them, or with the object of obtaining alms.

<sup>1</sup> John xiv. 27.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Clement Marot's hymn :

‘ Si qu'en paix, en seurité bonne  
Resterai et reposerai,  
Car, Seigneur, ta bonté tout ordonne,  
Et elle seule me espoir donne  
Que sauf et sain regnant serai.’

<sup>3</sup> 2 Cor. vi. 3-10.



The industry, the trades, the ordinary toil and every-day avocations of men were thus tacitly condemned, though the lay disciple might still continue to practise most of them. Christianity is opposed to all this *toto cælo*. Our Lord went about among men, sanctifying alike their innocent joys and their sorrows, though thereby incurring the reproach of being ‘a friend of publicans and sinners.’<sup>1</sup> Even in His last great prayer for His disciples He says, ‘I pray not that Thou wouldest take them out of the world, but that Thou wouldest keep them from the evil.’<sup>2</sup> He told His disciples that they were the light of the world, warning them therefore, ‘Let your light so shine forth before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.’<sup>3</sup> Instead of withdrawing from the ordinary avocations of the world, they were to remember that they were ‘the salt of the earth,’<sup>4</sup> and were to strive to keep the world from utter corruption. Hence it is that we find the Apostles not only working with their own hands, but also pointing out to their disciples the dignity of labour, bidding them remember that ‘If any man will not work, neither should he eat,’<sup>5</sup> and exhorting them, whatsoever they did in word or in deed, to do heartily,<sup>6</sup> as unto God, and not as unto men, doing even the most ordinary thing ‘to the glory of God.’<sup>7</sup> No greater difference could well be imagined, therefore, than is to be found in this respect between Buddha’s teaching and that of Christ. To Buddha the joys, sorrows, suffering, and labours of men were ‘Māro’s realm,’<sup>8</sup> and even their very senses rendered them subject to his sway.<sup>9</sup> It is true that, looking at the *moral*

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xi. 19; Luke vii. 34.

<sup>2</sup> John xvii. 15.

<sup>3</sup> Matt. v. 16.

<sup>4</sup> Matt. v. 13.

<sup>5</sup> 2 Thess. iii. 10.

<sup>6</sup> Col. iii. 17.

<sup>7</sup> 1 Cor. x. 31.

<sup>8</sup> Māra-dheyyam (Māra-Samyuttam, II., vii.: 7),

<sup>9</sup> Cf. Māra-Samyuttam, cap. ii., v. 3; vi. 7; vii. 7; ix. 6-14.



state of the world (at which Buddha did *not* look), an Apostle tells us that ‘the whole world lieth in the wicked one<sup>1</sup>’; but, nevertheless, He who created all things, and for whose<sup>2</sup> pleasure they are and were created, has said, ‘All souls are Mine.’<sup>3</sup> The Bible teaches us that this is *God’s* world, however marred by human rebellion and consequent misery; it is not abandoned or rejected by Him, whom we are taught to call our Father, without whose permission not even a sparrow can fall to the ground,<sup>4</sup> nor can a hair of our head perish.<sup>5</sup> We are called to be ‘workers together with’ God,<sup>6</sup> who has given ‘to every man his work’ to do<sup>7</sup>; and we are taught to look forward to the time of the regeneration<sup>8</sup> and restoration<sup>9</sup> of all things, when ‘the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord as the waters cover the sea.’<sup>10</sup>

Again, where can we find a greater contrast than between the practical Atheism of Buddhism and the teaching of our Lord on the subject of our heavenly Father’s love and care for us? In Buddhism there is no room for God; in Christianity God is everywhere present. Buddha teaches that man must be his own light, his own refuge, trusting entirely to his own strength and his own efforts.<sup>11</sup> Christ tells us that apart from Him<sup>12</sup> we can do nothing; and His Apostle shows us the secret of strength when he says, ‘I can do all things through Christ, who strengtheneth me.’<sup>13</sup> We are warned of the

<sup>1</sup> 1 John v. 19.

<sup>2</sup> Rev. iv. 11.

<sup>3</sup> Ezek. xviii. 4.

<sup>4</sup> Matt. x. 29.

<sup>5</sup> Luke xxi. 18.

<sup>6</sup> 2 Cor. vi. 1.

<sup>7</sup> Mark xiii. 34.

<sup>8</sup> Matt. xix. 28.

<sup>9</sup> Acts iii. 21 : ἀχρι χρόνων ἀποκαταστάσεως πάντων.

<sup>10</sup> Hab. ii. 14.

<sup>11</sup> ‘Tasmā ti, Ānanda, attadīpā viharatha attasaraṇā, anaññasaraṇā dhammasaraṇā anaññasaraṇā’ (Mahāparinibbāna-Suttaṃ, p. 22).

<sup>12</sup> John xv. 5.

<sup>13</sup> Phil. iv. 13.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



even to the case of suicide. In answer to the inquiry whether suicide is an evil deed or a sin, he says: 'Suicide, provided that duties undertaken towards other persons are in nowise thereby violated, is no evil deed, for each living being has an indisputable right over his own life. But suicide is a foolish act, for it endeavours to cut off forcibly a thread of life which will necessarily be joined again, and for the most part, moreover, under still more unfavourable circumstances than those are which the self-murderer attempted to elude.'<sup>1</sup> We see here that such a deed is condemned as being unwise and unsuitable, because it places the man under circumstances in the next existence which render it more difficult than it was here for him to attain to Nirvāṇa. It is hardly necessary to point out how opposed this is to Christian teaching, not only with regard to this particular deed, but with reference to the distinction between right and wrong. Even in Old Testament times, as we have already seen, we find God saying to the Israelites, 'Ye shall be holy, for I, the Lord your God, am holy.'<sup>2</sup> God's will is but the expression of His unchangeably perfect nature, which is wholly good. Good and evil, as far as principles and motives are concerned—for in accordance with them are our actions weighed—are eternally distinct and opposed to one another, since the former is in accord with the nature and will of an all-

<sup>1</sup> 'Ist der Selbstmord ein Unrecht oder eine Sünde?—Der Selbstmord ist, falls dadurch nicht etwa übernommene Pflichten gegen andere Menschen verletzt werden, kein Unrecht, denn jedes lebende Wesen hat ein unanfechtbares Recht auf sein eigenes Leben. Aber Selbstmord ist eine thörichte Handlung, da er einen Lebensfaden gewaltsam abzuschneiden sucht, der mit Nothwendigkeit wieder angeknüpft wird und zwar meist unter noch ungünstigeren Umständen als diejenigen sind, denen der Selbstmörder zu entfliehen trachtete' (*op. cit.*, p. 59).

<sup>2</sup> Lev. xix. 2.



holy God, the latter contrary thereto. As man is made in the image of God, that which is contrary to the Divine nature must be contrary to man's true nature, and therefore injurious to it. Hence, sin degrades and injures a man, while virtue ennobles him. But we are urged to seek to do right through the revelation of the love of the heavenly Father towards us, and are assured of His grace to enable us to obey His will. The lost harmony between God's will and ours is restored, not by force, but by the attractive power of the Divine Love, manifested in God's care for us, and revealed in our Lord Jesus Christ. But Buddhism, knowing nothing of God, knows nothing of the heinousness of sin or of the beauty of virtue. Man is self-dependent, and hence becomes selfish, lives for himself alone, and aims only at his deliverance from an existence which seems to him aimless, objectless, a curse, and not a blessing.

A great contrast will also be found between the Christian and the Buddhist cosmogony. The Buddhist deems the problem of the origin of the world an insoluble one;<sup>1</sup> the only thing about the matter of which he feels sure is that there is not a Divine Creator who made all things. But Buddha fancied that he knew much about

<sup>1</sup> "Hat der Buddha Nichts über den ersten Anfang und über das Ende des Weltalls gelehrt?"

"Nein."

"Warum nicht?"

"Weil dieses Wissen die Kräfte des menschlichen Verstandes übersteigt (transszendent ist), und, selbst wenn es erlangt und in Worten gelehrt werden könnte, die Menschen in ihrer geistigen und moralischen Entwicklung doch nicht fördern würde, weil es nicht zur Aufhebung des Leidens, nicht zum Heil, zur Befreiung, zum Nirwāna führt. Phantasie, Verstand und abstrakte Vernunft werden sich stets vergeblich abmühen, einen Beginn der Zeit, eine Grenze des Raumes, eine Entstehung des Seins, der Welt und der Individualität vorzustellen oder zu denken" ('Buddhistischer Katechismus,' pp. 40, 41).



the world as it is, this earth and the other worlds which together form the material universe. Hence, he tells us the wonderful tales about Mount Meru (also called Sineru), the enormous lakes and trees, the huge lions and other animals of the Himālayas (*Himavat*), oceans 840,000 miles deep, the Jambu-tree, from which India takes its name of Jambudīpo—which is *only* 1,000 miles high—fishes 10,000 miles in length, the chariot-like form of India, and other matters of that description, of which the English reader will find an account in Hardy's works<sup>1</sup> on Buddhism. We do not wonder at finding such errors in the Buddhist Sacred Canon, for all false religions contain such. The Muḥammadan Traditions (*Aḥādīth*) of both the Sunnis and the Shī'ahs abound in similar absurdities,<sup>2</sup> as do many of the Rabbinical<sup>3</sup> writings. But the very fact that Buddha made such mistakes in matters in which men can now put his assertions to the test—if we attribute these statements to him, as his disciples do—renders it impossible for any educated man to believe that Buddha was in reality omniscient. Hence, the spread of education is fatal to Buddhism. Contrast all this with the Bible. We know that opponents have for many centuries endeavoured to convince us that the book abounds in historical, scientific, and other errors, and some of them have at least succeeded

<sup>1</sup> These examples are taken from his 'Legends and Theories of the Buddhists,' chapter ii., and authorities quoted in appendices; *cf.* also 'Manual of Buddhism.' He takes the *yojana* at ten miles.

<sup>2</sup> See some of them quoted, with authorities, in my 'Religion of the Crescent,' pp. 119, 120, and Appendix C, p. 16.

<sup>3</sup> *Cf.* Rabbinical comments on many parts of the Old Testament—*e.g.*, Hagigah xi. 1; see also A. Geiger's work, 'Was hat Mohammed aus dem Judenthume aufgenommen?' McColl's 'The Old Paths,' etc. The Targum of Jonathan on Gen. ii. 9 says that the Tree of Life was in height a journey of 500 years.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



Scripture, to contradict one another, however much they may appear to differ. We are not forgetful that physical science is not complete, but is only in a condition of progress, and that at present our finite reason enables us only to see through a glass darkly ; and we confidently believe that a time will come when the two records will be seen to agree in every particular.'

Of course, certain other equally eminent men have differed from these authorities in these matters. But could one even imagine such a difference of opinion among learned men with reference to the scientific statements of the Buddhist Scriptures? No defence of them is in the remotest degree possible. It is well to bear this in mind. The cosmogony, geography, and astronomy of Buddhism are manifestly false ; those of the Bible are correct, as far as our present knowledge enables us to judge.

We have already seen that Buddhism did not address itself to the poor, the afflicted, the oppressed, the ignorant, the sinful, to all of which classes Christianity has appealed successfully. Experience has also shown that the Buddhist's renunciation of the world differs vastly from that of the Christian. Buddhism cannot consistently concern itself with family, religious, intellectual, or political life. Consider for a moment what that means. What would be the condition of Europe now if the Christian Faith had always adopted the attitude that true Buddhism is constrained by its very nature to maintain in these matters? The condition of so-called Christian nations is not what it should be, but it is at least far better in every possible way than that of Buddhist peoples. And just in proportion to the fidelity of the adherents of each of the two religions to the principles inculcated by its Founder will the influence



of Christianity on the community at large be better, and that of Buddhism worse. The more true and earnest Christians that exist in any nation, the more does that nation progress morally, intellectually, and in every other way, for the Christian has learnt that 'none of us liveth unto himself,'<sup>1</sup> that we are not our own,<sup>2</sup> that we are workers together with God,<sup>3</sup> that God has given 'to every man his work.' But the earnest Buddhist deems it necessary to become a monk, to abstain from all work except that of teaching others to take as low a view of their fellow-men and of this fair world as he does himself. The further he advances along the road to Nirvāṇa, the more useless does he become, the less bound to show kindness to his fellow-creatures, the more injurious to them, since he is a living condemnation of honest labour, intellectual effort, and even of the most ordinary human duties and affections. A nation which honestly adopted Buddha's cheerless creed would die out within a generation.

In nothing can a greater contrast between Buddhism and Christianity be found than in their treatment of women. It is hardly necessary to state—for it follows from what has been already said—that Buddhism regards woman as a snare. In Buddha's original plan no place for woman was found in the Order. When he was persuaded to admit female mendicants, he prophesied, we are told, that as a result his Law would practically be forgotten in the short space of 500 years.<sup>4</sup> The female mendicant all her life lives in a state of the most humble servitude, occupying a place far lower<sup>5</sup> than that of the monk. Some of them are spoken of with respect in the

<sup>1</sup> Rom. xiv. 7.

<sup>2</sup> Οὐκ ἐστὲ ἐαυτῶν (1 Cor. vi. 19).

<sup>3</sup> 2 Cor. vi. 1.

<sup>4</sup> Cullavaggo, X. 1.

<sup>5</sup> See the whole subject well dealt with by Bishop Copleston ('Buddhism,' cap. xix.).



Buddhist Scriptures for their generosity and devotion, and even one of the Canonical Books, the *Therīgātho*, consists of religious poems composed by the nuns. But this only proves how great a fault it is in Buddhism not to make due provision for the piety, fidelity, and self-devotion of women. The position of woman in India was a fairly good one when Buddhism arose. She enjoyed<sup>1</sup> a considerable degree of liberty, and was respected, if not as much as by the early Teutons, at least far more than she is now. The Mahābhārata and other Sanskrit works show this as clearly with regard to ancient India as the Iliad and Odyssey do in reference to ancient Hellas. Although it may not be due to Buddhism alone that, even in Buddhist lands, the position of the fair sex is lower to-day than it was over 2,000 years ago in India, yet we can at least see that Buddhism has not asserted for woman her rightful position in the world as man's loved and honoured helpmeet. There is nothing in all Buddha's teaching which in the least degree tends in this direction.

As Buddhism offers no high ideal, no noble aim, no spiritual comfort in life, so in death also it offers no hope save the dreary one of extinction. It does indeed tell of other worlds higher than this, in some of which the pleasures of the senses are to be indulged in, while in others, again, they are not. But the Buddhist is forbidden to hope for these existences, for the very hope will bind him to an existence which is misery and suffering, as he believes all existence is and ever must be. Buddha himself does, indeed, in repelling Māro's temptations, boast that the 'Deadly One' is overthrown,<sup>2</sup> and

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Oldenberg's 'Buddha,' English translation, p. 164.

<sup>2</sup> Māra-Samyuttam, *passim*—e.g., cap. ii., § 5 : 3 : 'Nihato tvam asi, antakā-ti.' *Antako*, the 'Ender,' is a title of Māro ; cf. the Atharva





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



to prove the mythical theory of the Gospel portraiture of our Saviour, and to derive men's highest knowledge of God from a distorted animism or the worship of fetishes. The foundation on which such a theory of the connexion between Buddhism and the Christianity of the Gospels rests is ignorance, with a semblance of learning, even more than prejudice. Attempts to prove that certain stories, now found, for example, in later Northern Buddhist works like the *Lalita-Vistara*, existed before our Gospels were written may safely be said to have broken down,<sup>1</sup> the proved facts of the case being sufficient to refute the theory. Again, slight and casual resemblances in phrases and single words between the Bible and the *English versions* of parts of the Buddhist Canon have been pressed into the service. For example, the Buddhist 'Beatitudes,' as they have been called, have been supposed to have some connexion with the Beatitudes in the Gospel. Here the resemblance lies in the name which *an English translator* has given to these verses ascribed to Buddha, although in reality, as we have seen, Buddha is speaking of *boons*. The fact that both Christ and Buddha are supposed to have related a

<sup>1</sup> See Rhys Davids' discussion of the date of the *Lalita-Vistara*, on which work most of the attempted comparisons of the Gospel history with later Buddhist legends are based, in his Hibbert Lectures, pp. 198-204. R. Davids points out that the Tibetan version of that work was made (as Foucaux acknowledges) 'at some date which cannot be earlier, but may be much later, than the sixth century of our era, or 1,000 years after the birth of Gotama' (p. 192). 'All that we can at present say is that books of a similar character were in existence as early as six or seven hundred years after the birth of Gotama, and that one of these may turn out to be substantially the same as ours' (p. 200).

Dr. Kellogg, in his 'The Light of Asia and the Light of the World,' has answered Professor Seydel's theory as given in his work 'Das Evangelium von Jesu in seinen Verhältnissen zu Buddha-Sage und Buddha-Lehre.'



parable of the mustard-seed is another example of the danger arising from too little knowledge. What could be more unlike than the story of Kisā-Gotamī seeking mustard-seed<sup>1</sup> to bring to life again her dead infant, and our Saviour's parable<sup>2</sup> to which reference is made? Another example might be adduced from the words, 'I counted it not loss so that I might win the Buddhahood,'<sup>3</sup> used in the English version of Professor Oldenberg's 'Buddha,' in the story of Vessantaro. The exact translation of the Pāli here is, 'I regarded it not, just for the sake of (obtaining) Buddhahood,' as given above.<sup>4</sup> In this, as in many other cases, the English or other translator has inadvertently used as a free translation certain Biblical expressions; then some sciolist, ignorant of Pāli, triumphantly adduces the resemblance in words thus produced as a proof that the Bible has borrowed from the Buddhist books, though, as in this instance, the words in which the resemblance consists *do not occur in the Pāli*. Even casual resemblances between the Bible and certain Buddhist writings can be more than paralleled by a still greater likeness between Buddhist doctrines and those of certain Greek philosophers<sup>5</sup>—

<sup>1</sup> Quoted in *Lecture II.*, pp. 104, 105.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. xiii. 31; Mark iv. 31; Luke xiii. 19.

<sup>3</sup> Oldenberg's 'Buddha,' English translation, p. 303. The passage compared with this is Phil. iii. 7, 8.

<sup>4</sup> *Lecture III.*, p. 156.

<sup>5</sup> When Christianity is compared with Buddhism, why not compare the following passages with one another, and draw similar conclusions from casual resemblances?

#### 1. *Epicureanism.*

1. Lucretius, i. 44-49; *cf.* the Sammāsamādhī (fourth Jhānam).

2. *Ibid.*, ii. 7-14; *cf.* Dham., śl. 28, Milinda, p. 387.\*

3. *Ibid.*, ii. 1-19; *cf.* Dham., śll. 197-202.\*

---

\* Compared by Rhys Davids, *Hibbert Lectures*, pp. 164-166.



Pythagoras, for example, or Buddha's contemporary, Heraclitus. Yet it has not been suggested that Buddha borrowed his precision regarding numbers or his doctrine

---

(The resemblance is quite as close as that which Fausböll notices between Dham., sl. 394, and Luke xi. 39, or between Dham., sls. 219, 220, and Rev. xiv. 13.)

## 2. Stoicism.

Horace's 'Impavidum ferient ruinæ' ('Carminum,' lib. iii., 3, vv. 1-8); cf. Māra-Samyuttam, ii., § 1 : 4, and i., § 6 : 5.

## 3. Old Hebrew.

Ps. ciii. 13 : 'Like as a father pitieth his own children'; cf. Mahā-parinibbāna-Suttam, p. 14 : 'Tato nam anukampati mātā puttam va orasam.'

## 4. Gospel and Epistles.

Matt. vii. 12 (Golden Rule); cf. Dham., sls. 129, 130, and Confucius' 'Reciprocity.'

Rom. xii. 21 ; cf. Dham., sl. 223.

## 5. Modern.

1. Shakespeare : 'How far that little candle casts his beams ! So shines a good deed in a naughty world' ; cf. Dham., sl. 304.

2. Persian : 'Ān kih na dānad va na dānad kih na dānad' ; cf. Dham., sl. 63.

3. Spanish saying : 'Whatever good thou doest, do it again and again' ; cf. Dham., sls. 117, 118.

Or Heraclitus, 'Everything flows on,' the universe is 'an ever-living fire,' with Buddha's similar ideas (Oldenberg, 'Buddha,' English translation, p. 259).

Or, again, the Greek Γνῶθι σαυτόν, with Muṇḍaka Upanishad, ii. 2, 5 : 'Know the *ātman* only, and away with everything else ; it alone is the bridge to immortality' ; cf. Bhagavadgītā, xviii. 66.

Or the *moderation* inculcated by Pythagoras, Καὶ πλεησμονήν πᾶσαν ἀποδοκιμάζει, λέγων μὴ παραβαίνειν μήτε τῶν πόνων μήτε τῶν σιτίων μηδένα τὴν συμμετρίαν (Diog. Laert., lib. viii., cap. i., § 6), with Buddha's 'Middle Course' : 'Dve 'me, bhikkhave, antā pabbajitena na sevitabbā. . . Yo cāyaṃ kāmesu kāmāsukhallīkânuyogo, hīno, gammo, pothujjaniko, anariyo, anattasamhito : yo cāyaṃ attā-kila. mathânuyogo, dukkho, anariyo, anattasamhito. Ete kho . . . ubho





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



slightest comparison is sufficient to show that they rested throughout on a basis of doctrine fundamentally opposed.<sup>1</sup>

But though it is impossible to deduce any part of the teaching of the New Testament from Buddhist sources, yet it is an indisputable fact that Buddhism has not been without its very decided influence upon some corrupt forms of Christianity. One example of this is the story of Barlaam and Josaphat. This tale was at one time well known in many parts of Europe, and it has been shown<sup>2</sup> that Josaphat—though, through a mistaken belief that he was an early Christian saint, he has been canonized by the Roman and Greek Churches—is none other than Buddha himself! Again, the whole of the monastic system is non-Christian. Its more noted forms of self-denial, its prohibition of private property among members of the Order, while permitting the Order itself to accumulate landed and other property, its insistence upon celibacy, its prescribed fasts, its peculiar dress, and many other things of the same description, show that monasticism is directly due to Buddhism. This is particularly evident in the case of the mendicant friars of the Middle Ages. The Buddhist denunciation of the crime of following any other teacher than Buddha himself may have been the origin of the idea that arose in comparatively early Christian times, that separation from

<sup>1</sup> Hibbert Lectures, 1881, pp. 151, 152; see also Max Müller, 'Six Systems of Indian Philosophy,' pp. 82, 83.

<sup>2</sup> Johannes Damascenus, who lived at the Court of the Khalifeh Al Manşūr (A.D. 753-774), wrote the story of Barlaam and Josaphat as a manual of Christian Theology. Prince Josaphat is Buddha, the name being a corruption of the title 'Bodhisattva' (Pāli *Bodhisatto*) given to each Buddha before his incarnation. Josaphat is a saint in both the Greek and the Roman calendar; in the former his day is August 26, in the latter November 27.



what claimed to be the 'Catholic' Church was a deadly sin. The striking resemblance which exists between the Lamaism of Tibet and the Papacy is too close to be due to anything but a common origin.<sup>1</sup> Professor Rhys Davids on this subject well says :<sup>2</sup> 'When we remember how fundamentally opposed are the views of life set forth in the Pāli Piṭakas to those set forth in the New Testament, and how different are the characters, the ideas, the habits and customs, of some of the peoples among whom the two religions have been adopted, we can then perceive how instructive is the fact—one of the most curious facts in the whole history of the world—that Buddhism and Christianity have both developed, in the course of 1,500 years, into sacerdotal and sacramental systems, each with its bells and rosaries and images and holy water ; each with its services in dead languages, with choirs and processions and creeds and incense, in which the laity are spectators only ; each with its mystic rites and ceremonies performed by shaven priests in gorgeous robes ; each with its abbots and monks and nuns of many grades ; each with its worship of virgins, saints, and angels ; its reverence to the Virgin and the Child ; its confessions, fasts, and purgatory ; its idols, relics, symbols, and sacred pictures ; its shrines and pilgrimages ; each with its huge monasteries and gorgeous cathedrals ; its powerful hierarchy and its wealthy cardinals ; each, even, ruled over by a Pope, with a triple tiara on his head and the sceptre of temporal

<sup>1</sup> May not the origin of at least certain peculiarities in both systems be due to Persian (Magian or Zoroastrian) influences? (The mitre is certainly associated in derivation with the Persian Sun-god Mithra.) I owe this suggestion to Dr. Hoey, the English translator of Professor Oldenberg's 'Buddha.'

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. 192-194. By 'Christianity,' as is evident from the context, Professor Rhys Davids means Roman Catholicism.



power in his hand, the representative on earth of an eternal Spirit in the heavens!

‘ If all this be chance, it is a most stupendous miracle of coincidence—it is, in fact, ten thousand miracles. And it cannot be objected that the resemblance is in externals only. The principles which bind each of these two organizations together, which give them their recuperative power, are also similar. Each of the two churches claims to be guided by the Eternal Spirit, who is especially present in the infallible Head of the Church; each lays peculiar stress upon the mystic sacrament in which the priest reverently swallows a material thing, and by doing so believes himself to become partaker in some mysterious way of a part of the Divine Being, who during the ceremony has become incorporated therein.’

The Gnosticism of early Christian times may also be traced in at least some measure to a Buddhist source. The very word *γνῶσις* is a translation of the *bodhi* at which Buddha aimed, and from the supposed attainment of which he derived the title.

Manichæism, again, is by the ecclesiastical historian Socrates (lib. i., cap. xxii.), traced to ‘Scythianus,’ whose disciple Terebinthus took the name of Buddha. (This title ‘Scythianus’ may preserve a recollection of Gotamo’s descent from the Śākas.) Its resemblance to Buddhism in some important respects is very striking.

Between the tales to be found in many of the Apocryphal Gospels and other such pseudo-Christian works and the fables contained in the various books<sup>1</sup> of

<sup>1</sup> Sir Monier Monier-Williams (‘Buddhism,’ pp. 69, 70) enumerates nine Nepalese canonical Scriptures (*Dharmas* or *Laws*): (1) *Prajñā-pāramitā*, (2) *Gaṇḍa-vyūha*, (3) *Dasa-bhūmīśvara*, (4) *Samādhi-rāja*, (5) *Lañkāvatāra*, (6) *Saddharma-puṇḍarīka*, (7) *Tathāgata-guhyaka*, (8) *Lalita-vistara*, (9) *Suvarṇa-prabhāsa*. Non-canonical are the Mahā-





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



In the Arabic 'Gospel of the Infancy'<sup>1</sup> and in the Qu'rân<sup>2</sup> we find the statement that Jesus spoke when an infant in the cradle and asserted His Divine mission. So also of Buddha it is stated in these later legends that, when he was born, he 'forthwith<sup>3</sup> walked seven steps towards each quarter of the horizon ; and, as he walked, at each step there sprang from the earth beneath his feet a lotus flower ; and, as he looked steadfastly in each direction, his mouth uttered these words : ". . . In all the world I am the very chief."'

We cannot now enter into the question whether the later Buddhists borrowed all these tales from stories current among credulous Christians of early Christian times, or whether in some cases, as in that of the bowing down of the fruit-tress, the Buddhist tale is not of decidedly earlier date than the apocryphal Christian one. The fact that in the Apocryphal Gospels we find absurd indeed—but *comparatively* sober—fables, while in the 'Romantic History' we discover these tales in such an extremely exaggerated form that they can best be described as the product of mythology gone mad, tends to convince us that the Buddhistic is the later form. Nor is the matter of much real importance, though it is of considerable interest. The difficulty of

<sup>1</sup> Arab. 'Evangelium Infantiae,' cap. i. :

ان يسوع تكلم وهو حين كان في المهد وقال لمريم امه اني انا هو  
يسوع ابن الله

<sup>2</sup> Sûrah xix., v. 30 *et seq.* ; also Sûrah v., v. 109 ; Sûrah iii., vv. 40, 41, etc.

<sup>3</sup> Beal, 'Rom. Leg.,' p. 44. In Beal's version of the Fo-sho-hing-tsan-king (pp. 3 and 4) much the same story is told, but there Buddha says : 'This birth is in the condition of a Buddha : after this I have done with renewed birth : now only am I born this once, for the purpose of saving all the world.'



coming to a definite conclusion is due to the uncertainty which exists regarding the date of all Buddhist literature. Writing had not become of extended<sup>1</sup> use in India, even if it had been introduced, in Buddha's time. The earliest Pāli works show that a considerable interval must have elapsed between Buddha's death and their composition. The Gāthas which many of them contain must be much the most ancient fragments which remain of the earliest Buddhist literature, unless an exception be made in favour of the Pātimokkham. But we have only probable conjecture, instead of sufficient proof, to justify<sup>2</sup> us in identifying any of the books of the Pāli Canon with those mentioned in the edicts of King Aśoka Piyadassi<sup>3</sup> (reigned 257-220 B.C.<sup>4</sup>). All attempts to prove that the Lalita-Vistara and other Sanskrit works of that description were in existence at or shortly after the beginning of the Christian era have failed, and we know only this much, that such books certainly existed in the sixth century after Christ.<sup>5</sup>

Contrast with this the certainty which we have now attained about the antiquity of far the greater part of the books of the New Testament. Professor Harnack's<sup>6</sup> investigations have established the fact that they were in

<sup>1</sup> Mon. Williams, 'Buddhism,' p. 19, note.

<sup>2</sup> *Vide* notes to p. 70 above.

<sup>3</sup> The Third Buddhist Council is said to have been held in the sixteenth or seventeenth year of Asoka's reign, about 244-242 B.C., at Patnā (Pāṭali-putra) (Mon. Williams, 'Buddhism,' p. 59).

<sup>4</sup> This follows from the facts stated by Professor Bühler in 'Three New Edicts of Aśoka,' pp. 9-20.

<sup>5</sup> Rhys Davids, Hibbert Lectures, p. 199; see the whole subject discussed there (pp. 197-204).

Mon. Williams says it may, at earliest, have been written in the second century of our era ('Buddhism,' p. 70).

<sup>6</sup> Harnack, 'Die Chronologie der Altchristlichen Litteratur bis Eusebius,' vol. i., preface.



existence for the most part long before the end of the first Christian century, so that the traditional account of their origin, antiquity, and genuineness is now proved to be correct in almost every respect. The difference between the Christian and the Buddhist Scriptures in this matter is as worthy of notice as is the contrast between the two religions in their principles. In the Gospels we have historical facts, the words of One who spoke as no mere man before or since ever yet spoke; a character so human, and yet so Divine, that even Romance<sup>1</sup> has never equalled it; a manifestation of God which not only satisfies our reason, but quenches the deep thirst of all human hearts and spirits; a motive power in love to Him who first loved us which is a perennial spring of all that is noblest in thought, word, and deed; a Life which has since proved not only the incentive to countless of the highest and holiest men and women whom the world has ever seen, but one to which even the enemies<sup>2</sup> of Christ's religion have vied with His disciples in paying their tribute of admiration. In the Buddhist books we see a man turning away with loathing from a surfeit of sensuality (if we may believe the accounts there attributed to Buddha himself), one whose greatness of soul could not content itself with merely earthly pleasures, but yet one who, knowing nothing better than earthly things, and seeing their vanity apart from the God whom he knew not, nor sought to know, strove after annihilation for himself; who never sought in any way to benefit a single one of his fellow-creatures,

<sup>1</sup> John Stuart Mill tells us that the Gospel accounts of Christ's life must be historical, for no poet or dramatist ever lived who could have 'imagined the life and character revealed in the Gospels.' Cf. Row's 'Jesus of the Evangelists'; also 'Ecce Homo'; also 'The Fact of Christ,' P. C. Simpson (Hodder and Stoughton, 3s. 6d.).

<sup>2</sup> *E.g.*, Strauss and Renan.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



## NOTE ON BUDDHA'S BIRTH

**M**ANY modern writers on the subject have dwelt on the marvels which are said to have accompanied Buddha's conception and his birth. It may be as well to call attention to the following facts in this connexion :

1. The early Pāli works give no hint whatever to the effect that Māyā was a virgin at the time of Buddha's conception, and they are free from the marvels which in much later times crept into the narrative.

2. We first find *some* of these in the Introduction to the Jātakas, which are of much later date than the more authoritative Pāli works. Even there the wondrous conception of Buddha is related, not as a *fact*, but only as a *dream*. The passages referred to are appended below in the original.

3. Even in the Introduction to the Jātakas, however, nothing whatever is said as to Māyā's virginity. The first indication of any such belief is found in the Sanskrit poem of Aṣvaghosha, entitled *Buddha-Carita* (book i., śll. 17, 18, ed. Cowell). This work, in the opinion of Professor Cowell, *may* date from the first century of the Christian era, for the Professor, speaking of the author of the work, says: 'Whether<sup>1</sup> he could be the con-

<sup>1</sup> Introduction to the Buddha-Carita, p. v.



temporary and spiritual adviser of Kanishka in the first century A.D. is not yet proved, though it appears very probable; but at any rate his Buddha-Carita seems to have been translated into Chinese early in the fifth century. This must imply that it enjoyed a great reputation among the Buddhists of India, and justifies our fixing the date of its composition at least one or two centuries earlier.' Aṣvaghosha boldly accepts the things which Māyā saw in her dream as having in reality occurred, and adds many other marvels to them, using to the full the poet's license in such matters. Possibly this Buddhist writer may have adopted the idea of the virgin birth of Buddha from having heard some account of Christ's birth of a virgin. At any rate, the idea was completely foreign to earlier Buddhism, which saw nothing marvellous in Buddha's conception and birth. There can also be no doubt that Christian teachers reached the western shores of India even in Apostolic times (*vide* George Smith, 'The Conversion of India,' pp. 8 and 9). The most important of Aṣvaghosha's words on the subject are: 'Having gained her [Māyā], he [Śuddhodana] often mastered desire, ever woman's practice, and darkness [*or* anger] then too [he mastered], not at all by night having approached the brilliant moon-plant' (book i., śl. 17).

We proceed to give the passages referred to in their original languages, giving first the Pāli and then the Sanskrit extracts, that the student may perceive how the myth arose and grew. Of course, the account in the Lalita-Vistara is still more marvellous.

#### (a) MĀYĀ'S DREAM.

Tadā kira Kapilavatthunagare āsāḥhinakkhattaṃ ghuṭṭhaṃ ahosi. Mahājano nakkhattaṃ kilāti. Mahāmāyā Devī pure puṇṇamāya satta-madivasato paṭṭhāya vigatasurāpānaṃ mālāgandhavibhūtisampannaṃ



nakkhattakīlaṃ anubhavamānā sattamadivase pāto va utthāya gandh-  
odakena nahāyitvā cattāri sataśassāni vissajjetvā mahādānaṃ datvā  
sabbālaṃkāravibhūsitā varabhojanaṃ bhuñjitvā uposathaṅgāni adhiṭ-  
thāya alaṃkatapaṭiyattaṃ sirigabbhaṃ pavisitvā sirisayane nipannā  
niddam okkamamānā imaṃ supinaṃ addasa : Cattāro kira naṃ mahā-  
rājāno sayanen' eva saddhiṃ ukkhipitvā Himavantam netvā saṭṭhi-  
yojanike Manosilātale sattayojanikassa mahāsālarukkhaṃsa heṭṭhā  
ṭhapetvā ekamantaṃ atthamsu. Atha nesaṃ deviyo āgantvā devim  
Anotattadahaṃ netvā mānusaṃ malaḥaraṇatthaṃ nahāpetvā dibbavattham  
nivāsāpetvā gandhehi vilimpāpetvā dibbapupphāni pilandhāpetvā (tato  
avidure Rajata-pabbato, tassa anto kanakavimānaṃ atthi), tattha  
pācīnaśīsaṃ dibbasayanaṃ paññāpetvā nipajjāpesuṃ. Atha Bodhi-  
satto setavaravāraṇo hutvā (tato avidure eko Suvanna-pabbato), tattha  
caritvā tato oruyha Rajatapabbatam abhirūhitvā uttaradisato āgamma  
rajatadāmaṇṇāya soṇḍāya setapadumaṃ gahetvā koṇcanādaṃ naditvā  
kanakavimānaṃ pavisitvā mātu sayanaṃ tikkhattum padakkhiṇaṃ  
katvā dakkhinapassam tāletvā kucchiṃ pavitṭhasadiso ahosi. Evaṃ  
uttarāsālhanakkhattena paṭisandhiṃ gaṇhi. Punadivase pabuddhā devī  
taṃ supinaṃ rañño ārocesi (Nidānakathā Jātaka, i. 50, 51).

#### (b) BUDDHA'S BIRTH.

Mahāmāyā Devī pattena telaṃ viya dasamāse kucchiyā Bodhisattaṃ  
pariharitvā paripuṇṇagabbhā ñātigharaṃ gantukāmā . Suddhodana-  
mahārājassa ārocesi : 'Icchāmi' ahaṃ, deva, kulasantakaṃ Devadaha-  
nagaraṃ gantun'-ti. Rājā, 'Sādhū'-ti sampaṭicchitvā Kapilavatthuto  
yāva Devadahanagarā maggaṃ samaṃ kāretvā kadalipuṇṇaghaṭṭha-  
japatakādīhi alaṃkārapetvā devim sovaṇṇasivikāya nisīdāpetvā amacca-  
śassena ukkhipāpetvā mahantena parivārena pesesi. Dvinnaṃ pana  
nagarānaṃ antare ubhayanagaravāsīnaṃ pi Lumbinivanaṃ nāma maṅ-  
galasālavanaṃ atthi. Tasmim samaye mūlato paṭṭhāya yāva aggasākhā  
sabbam ekaphāliphullaṃ ahosi, sākhantarehi c' eva pupphantarehi ca  
pañcavaṇṇabhamaragaṇā nānappakārā ca sakunasamghā madhuras-  
sarena vikūjantā vicaranti. Sakalaṃ Lumbinivanaṃ Cittalatāvana-  
sadisaṃ mahānubhāvassa rañño susajjita-āpānamaṇḍalaṃ viya ahosi.  
Devīyā taṃ disvā sālavanakīlaṃ kīlitukāmatā udapādi. Amaccā devim  
gahetvā sālavanaṃ pavisimsu. Sā maṅgalasālamūlaṃ gantvā sālāsākh-  
āyaṃ gaṇhitukāmā ahosi. Sālāsākhā suseditavettaggaṃ viya onamitvā  
devīyā hatthapathaṃ upagañchi. Sā hatthaṃ pasāretvā sākhaṃ aggahesi.  
Tāvad eva c' assā kammajavātā calimsu. Ath' assā sāniṃ parikkhipitvā  
mahājano patikkami. Sālāsākhaṃ gahetvā tiṭṭhamānāya eva c' assā  
gabbhavutthānaṃ ahosi. Tam khaṇaṃ yeva cattāro pi suddhacittā





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



The writer proceeds to mention other marvels, as, for instance, the fact that Buddha walked and spoke immediately after his birth. With these, however, we are not now concerned, though the story of our Lord's speaking when an infant in the cradle, as given in the Arabic 'Gospel of the Infancy,' and thence adopted into the Qu'rân, is probably taken from this or some similar Buddhist source.

According to Aṣvaghosha, in the passage quoted above, Buddha was born from his mother's side. This idea is of early date, for the incident is depicted on a column erected at Lumbinī by Aśoka. It is remarkable that, as Kemble has pointed out ('Solomon and Saturnus,' p. 240, quoted by Whitney Stokes in the preface to his edition of the 'Saltair na Rann,' an Irish work of the eleventh century), in the Anglo-Saxon 'Adrian and Ritheus' it is said that Christ was born 'þurh þæt swíðre breóst' (through the right breast) of the Virgin Mary. The Buddhist origin of this fable can hardly be questioned, though the sculptures represent Buddha as proceeding from Māyā's *left* side.

Of Christ's birth it is said in the 'Saltair na Rann,' lines 7529 and 7530, that He came forth from the crown of Mary's head.<sup>1</sup> But this is doubtless taken from the classical myth of the birth of Athēnē from the head of Zeus.

<sup>1</sup> 'Ri ro-genair, ni bine, do mulluch na h-Engine'—'A king was born, without sin, from the crown-of-the-head of the Virgin.' Is Rabelais ridiculing this idea when, in his 'Gargantua' (cap. vi.), he represents his hero as born from his mother's *left ear*: 'Sortit par l'oreille senestre. Soudain qu'il fut né, ne cria, comme les aultres enfans, *Mies, mies, mies*; mais, à bauite voix, s'escrivoit: "A boire, à boire, à boire l"'



# BIBLIOGRAPHY

## A.—BUDDHIST TEXTS.

### I.—ISSUES OF THE PĀLĪ TEXT SOCIETY.

#### (a) *Arrangement of Years.*

1882.	1888.
1. Journal.	1. Journal.
2. Buddhavansa and Cariyā Piṭ- aka.	2. Saṃyutta, vol. ii.
3. Āyāraṅga.	3. Aṅguttara, part ii.
1883.	1889.
1. Journal.	1. Journal.
2. Thera-theri-gāthā.	2. Dīgha, vol. i.
3. Puggala.	3. Peta Vatthu.
1884.	1890.
1. Journal.	1. Journal.
2. Saṃyutta, vol. i.	2. Saṃyutta, vol. iii.
1885.	3. Itivuttaka.
1. Journal.	1891.
2. Aṅguttara, part i.	1. Journal (1891-93).
3. Dhamma Saṃgaṇī.	2. Bodhi Vaṃsa.
4. Udāna.	1892.
1886.	1. Dhātu Kathā.
1. Journal.	2. Paramattha-dīpanī.
2. Sumaṅgala vol. i.	1893.
3. Vimāna Vatthu.	1. Saṃyutta, vol. iv.
1887.	2. Sutta Nipāta, vol. ii.
1. Journal.	
2. Majjhima, vol. i.	



1894.	1899.
1. Peta Vatthu Commentary.	1. Añguttara, part iv.
2. Kathā Vatthu, vol. i.	2. Majjhima, vol. iii., part i. (conclusion).
1895.	1900.
1. Añguttara, part iii.	1. Añguttara, vol. v.
2. Kathā Vatthu, vol. ii.	2. Majjhima, vol. iii., part ii.
1896.	1901.
1. Journal (1893-96).	1. Vimāna Vatthu Commentary.
2. Yogāvacara Manual.	2. Journal (1897-1901).
3. Majjhima, vol. ii., part i.	
1897.	1902.
1. Attha Sālinī.	1. Netti Pakaraṇa.
2. Sāsana Vamṣa.	2. Majjhima, vol. iii., part iii.
1898.	
1. Saṃyutta, vol. v. (conclusion).	
2. Majjhima, vol. ii., part ii.	

(b) *Texts published in the above Volumes arranged Alphabetically.*

NAME OF TEXT.	YEAR.	EDITOR.
1. *Abhidhammattha Saṃgaha ...	1884	Prof. Rhys Davids.
2. *Anāgata Vamṣa ...	1886	Prof. Minayeff.
3. Añguttara, vol. i. ...	1885	Dr. Morris.
„ vol. ii. ...	1888	„
„ vol. iii. ...	1895	Prof. Hardy.
„ vol. iv. (in the press)	—	„
4. Āyāraṅga Sutta ...	1882	Prof. Jacobi.
5. Buddha Vamṣa ...	1882	Dr. Morris.
6. Bodhi Vamṣa ...	1891	Mr. Strong.
7. Cariyā Piṭaka ...	1882	Dr. Morris.
8. *Cha Kesa Dhātu Vamṣa ...	1885	Prof. Minayeff.
9. *Dāṭhā Vamṣa ...	1884	Prof. Rhys Davids.
10. Dhamma Saṃgaṇī ...	1885	Prof. Ed. Müller.
11. Dhātu Kathā ...	1893	Mr. Gooneratne.
12. Dīgha Nikāya, vol. i. ...	1889	Prof. Rhys Davids and Mr. J. E. Carpenter.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# Know Your Bible

Forgotten Books' Full Membership provides unlimited access to more than 28,000 volumes of Christian literature for \$8.99/month

**HOLY BIBLE**

**Continue**

\*Fair use policy applies



## II.—OTHER PUBLICATIONS (ORIGINAL TEXTS.)

(a) *Pālī*.

Attanagalluvaṃsa, ed. J. d'Alwis ; Colombo, 1866.

Buddhaghosuppatti, ed. Jas. Gray ; Luzac and Co., London, 1900. 6s.

Dāṭhavaṃsa, ed. Mutu Coomāra Swāmy ; London, 1874.

Dhammapadam, ed. V. Fausböll ; Luzac and Co., London, 1900.  
7s. 6d.

Dīpavaṃsa, ed. Dr. H. Oldenberg ; Williams and Norgate, London.  
21s.

Jātaka, ed. V. Fausböll ; London. 7 vols., each 26s.

Jinālaṅkāra, ed. Jas. Gray ; Luzac and Co., London, 1900. 6s.

Kammavāca, ed. F. Spiegel ; Bonn, 1841.

Khuddaka-Pāṭha, ed. R. C. Childers ; J. R. A. S., 1870.

Mahāparinibbāna-Sutta, ed. R. C. Childers ; Trübner and Co., London,  
1878. 5s.

Mahāsatipatṭhāna-Sutta ; Maulmain, 1881.

Mahāvaṃsa, ed. Turnour ; Colombo, 1857.

Milinda-Pañho, ed. V. Trenckner ; Williams and Norgate, London,  
1880. 21s.

Vinaya-Piṭaka, ed. Dr. H. Oldenberg ; Williams and Norgate, 1879-  
1883. 5 vols., each 21s.

(b) *Sanskṛit*.

Adikarma-pradīpa and Bodhicaryāvatârâtîkâ (appended to Professor  
Poussin's 'Bouddhisme,' vol. i.) ; Luzac and Co., London and  
Paris, 1900. 10s. 6d.

Ashtasāhasrîkâ Prajñāpāramitâ, ed. Rājendralâla Mitra ; Calcutta  
(Bibl. Ind.), 1887-88. 6s.

Avadāna Kalpalatâ, ed. in Sanskrit and Tibetan by Chandra Dâs and  
Vidyābhūṣana ; Calcutta (Bibl. Ind.), 1886-96. Vols. i. and  
ii., 18s.

Lalita-Vistara, ed. Rājendralâla Mitra ; Calcutta (Bibl. Ind.), 1858.  
6s.

Mahāvastu, ed. E. Senart ; E. Leroux, Paris. Vols. i. and ii., each  
25 francs.

Buddha-carita of Aṣvaghosha, ed. Cowell ; Clarendon Press, 1893.

Śikshāsamuccaya of Śāntideva, ed. Bendall ; St. Petersburg, 1897-99.



## B.—A SELECT BIBLIOGRAPHY OF IMPORTANT WORKS ON BUDDHISM.

- ALABASTER : ' Wheel of the Law ' ; Trübner, London, 1871. 14s.
- ALWIS, J. DE : ' Buddhism ' ; Williams, London, 1863. 6s.  
' Buddhist Nirvâṇa ' ; Colombo, 1871.
- BASTIAN, A. : ' Der Buddhismus in seiner *Psychologie* ' ; Berlin, 1882.  
Marks 7.50.  
' Religions-philosophische Probleme auf dem Forschungsfelde  
buddistischer *Psychologie* ' ; 1884. 9s.  
' Der Buddhismus als Religiös-philosophisches System ' ; 1893.  
2s. 6d.
- BEAL, S. : ' Life of Hiuen Tsiang ' ; Trübner, London. 10s.  
' Texts from the Buddhist Canon ' ; Trübner, London. 7s. 6d.  
' Buddhist Records of the Western World ' ; Trübner, London.  
2 vols., 24s.  
' The Romantic History of Buddha ' ; Trübner, London,  
1875.  
' Fo-Sho-Hing-Tsan-King ' (a life of Buddha from the Chinese  
Sanskrit) (' Sacred Books of the East,' vol. xix.) ; Clarendon  
Press, Oxford, 1883. 10s. 6d.
- BIGANDET, BISHOP : ' Life and Legend of Gaudama ' ; Trübner, London,  
1888. 2 vols., 21s.  
' The Order of Buddhist Monks ' ; Trübner, London, 1866.
- BLONAY : ' Matériaux pour servir à l'Histoire de la Déesse bouddhique  
Tarâ ' ; 1895. 2s. 6d.
- BURNOUF : ' Introduction à l'Histoire du Bouddhisme indien ' : 1876.  
17s.  
' Le Lotus de la bonne Loi ' ; 1853. £3 3s.
- BÜHLER, G. : ' The Discovery of Buddha's Birthplace ' (*Athenæum* for  
March 6, 1897).  
' Three New Edicts of Aśoka ' ; Bombay, 1897. 3s.
- BUNSEN, E. DE (BARON) : ' The Angel Messiah of Buddhists, Essenes,  
and Christians ' ; Longmans, London, 1880. 10s. 6d.
- CERÉ, E. : ' Bréviaire du Bouddhiste ' ; 1893. 2s. 6d.



- COBBOLD, A. : 'Shintoism, Buddhism, and Christianity'; S.P.C.K., London. 2s. 6d.
- COLLINS, M. : 'Das Lied von der Weissen Lotus'; Leipzig, Grieben, 1890. Marks 1.80.
- COPLESTON, BISHOP : 'Buddhism, Primitive and Present'; Longmans, London, 1892.
- DAHLMANN, J. : 'Buddha'; Berlin, 1898. 6s.  
'Nirvâna'; 1896.
- DODS, MARCUS : 'Mohammed, Buddha, and Christ'; Hodder and Stoughton, London, 1886. 2s. 6d.
- DUMONTIER : 'Le Grand Bouddha de Hanoï'; 1888. 10s.
- EDKINS : 'Chinese Buddhism'; Trübner, London. 8s.
- EITEL, E. : 'Buddhism'; Hong Hong, 1873.
- ELKUND, J. A. : 'Nirvâṇa'; Leipzig, 1899. 6s.
- ELLINWOOD, F. : 'Oriental Religions and Christianity'; Nisbet, London, 1892.
- 'FAITHS OF THE WORLD' (St. Giles Lectures); Blackwood, Edinburgh, 1882. 5s.
- FALKE : 'Buddha, Christus, Mahomet'; 1896. 7s.
- FAUSBÖLL, V. : 'The Sutta-Nipâta' ('Sacred Books of the East,' vol. x.); Clarendon Press, Oxford. 10s. 6d.  
'Buddhist Birth Stories'; Houghton, Boston, U.S.A., 1881, \$5; Trübner, London, 18s.
- FEER, L. : 'Études bouddhiques'; Paris, 1881.
- GRÜNWEDEL : 'Mythologie des Buddhismus in Tibet und der Mongolei'; Brockhaus, Leipzig, 1900.
- HARDWICK, CHARLES : 'Christ and Other Masters'; Macmillan, London and New York, 1873. \$3.
- HARDY : 'Eastern Monachism'; Williams, London, 1864. 7s. 6d.  
'Manual of Buddhism in its Modern Development'; Williams, London, 1864. 21s.  
'Legends and Theories of the Buddhists'; Williams, London, 1866. 7s. 6d.  
'Christianity and Buddhism compared'; Colombo, 1874.
- HUTH : 'Geschichte des Buddhismus in der Mongolei'; 1892. 2 vols., 20s. and 30s. respectively.
- JACOBI, H. : 'Der Ursprung des Buddhismus aus dem Sâũkhya-Yoga'; Göttingen, 1896. 1s. 6d.
- JACOBS, J. . 'Barlaam and Josaphat'; London, 1890.
- JOHNSTON, S. : 'Oriental Religions'—I., India; Boston, U.S.A. 1872. \$5.





**THIS PAGE IS LOCKED TO FREE MEMBERS**

Purchase full membership to immediately unlock this page

# DELVE INTO FANTASY, MAGIC, MYTHOLOGY & FOLKLORE

Forgotten Books'  
Full Membership gives  
access to 797,885 ancient  
and modern, fiction and  
non-fiction books.

**Continue**

\*Fair usage policy applies



RHYS DAVIDS, T. W. : 'Buddhist Suttas' ('Sacred Books of the East,' vol. xi.) ; Clarendon Press, Oxford. 10s. 6d.

'Vinaya Texts' ('Sacred Books of the East,' vols. xiii., xvii., xx.) ; Clarendon Press, Oxford. 10s. 6d. each.

'Indian Buddhism' (Hibbert Lectures for 1881) ; Williams, London, 1897. Third edition, 3s. 6d.

'Buddhism' ('Non - Christian Religious Systems' Series) ; S.P.C.K., London. 2s. 6d.

RYANON, F. : 'Le Bouddhisme Japonais' ; 1889. 5s.

'SACRED BOOKS OF THE EAST,' edited by Professor Max Müller (on Buddhism, vols. x., xi., xiii., xvii., xix., xx., xxi., xxxv., xxxvi., xlix.) ; Clarendon Press, Oxford. 10s. 6d. each.

ST. HILAIRE, J. B. : 'Bouddha et sa Religion' ; Paris, 1866. Francs 3.50.

SCHÆBEL, CHARLES : 'Le Bouddha et le Bouddhisme' ; Paris, 1857.

SCHOTT, W. : 'Über den Buddhismus in Hochasien und in China' ; Berlin, 1846.

SENART, E. : 'Essai sur la Légende du Bouddha' ; Paris, 1882. 15 francs.

SEYDEL, RUDOLF : 'Das Evangelium von Jesu in s. Verhältnissen zu Buddha-Sage' ; Leipzig, 1882. 8s.

'Buddha und Christus' ; 1881. 1s.

'Die Buddhalegende und das Leben Jesu nach den Evangelien' ; 1884. 2s.

SILBERNAGL : 'Der Buddhismus nach seiner Entstehung, Fortbildung und Verbreitung' ; 1891. 3s.

SIMPSON, W. : 'The Buddhist Praying-wheel' ; Macmillan, London, 1896. 10s.

SINNETT : 'Die Esoterische Lehre oder Geheimbuddhismus' ; 1884. 4s.

STIX, H. S. : 'Christus oder Buddha' ; Leipzig, 1901.

SUBHÀDRA BIKSCHU : 'Buddhistischer Katechismus' ; 1888. 1s. 6d.

SUMMER, MARY : 'Histoire du Bouddha Sakya-Muni' ; Paris, 1874. 5 francs.

TARANATHA : 'Geschichte der Buddhismus in Indien' ; 1869. 6s.

TILBE, H. H. : 'Pāli Buddhism' ; Rangoon, 1900. 1s. 6d.

TITCOMB, BISHOP : 'Buddhism, Past and Present' ; R.T.S., London, 1883. 3s.

UPHAM, ED. : 'The History and Doctrine of Buddhism' ; Ackerman, London, 1829. £5 5s.



- VIRIEUX, E. : 'Le Bouddha, sa Vie, et sa Doctrine'; Paris, 1884.  
4 francs.
- VOIGT, G. : 'Buddhismus und Christenthum'; 1887. 1s. 6d.
- WADDELL : 'Lamaism'; Allen and Co., London.
- WARREN, H. C. : 'Buddhism in Translations' (Harvard Oriental Series); 1896. 5s. ; \$1.20.
- WASSILJEW, W. : 'Der Buddhismus'; St. Petersburg, 1860. 6 marks.
- WINDISCH : 'Mâra und Buddha'; 1895. 12s.
- WILLIAMS, M. MONIER- (SIR) : 'Buddhism in its Connexion with Brâhmanism and Hindûism'; London, 1889. 10s.
- WURM, PAUL : 'Der Buddhismus'; Gütersloh, 1880. 80 pf.

THE END